

1935 YEAR BOOK  
OF  
JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES

1935  
YEAR BOOK  
of  
Jehovah's witnesses  
Containing  
Report of the Year 1934  
with  
Daily Texts and Comments  
for 1935

---

*Corporate Publishers:*

Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society  
Peoples Pulpit Association  
International Bible Students Association  
Brooklyn, New York, U. S. A.  
Branch Offices appear on last page

Copyright 1934  
Made in the United States of America

## WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY

### *OFFICERS:*

J. F. RUTHERFORD  
*President*

C. A. WISE  
*Vice-President*

W. E. VAN AMBURGH  
*Secretary and Treasurer*

---

## PEOPLES PULPIT ASSOCIATION

### *OFFICERS:*

J. F. RUTHERFORD  
*President*

N. H. KNORR  
*Vice-President*

A. R. GOUX  
*Secretary and Treasurer*

---

## INTERNATIONAL BIBLE STUDENTS ASSOCIATION

### *OFFICERS:*

J. F. RUTHERFORD  
*President*

JESSE HEMERY  
*Vice-President*

E. C. CHITTY  
*Secretary*

W. E. VAN AMBURGH  
*Asst Secretary and Treasurer*

# 1935 YEAR BOOK of Jehovah's witnesses

J EHOVAH'S KINGDOM, ruling the world in righteousness and peace, has long been the hope of all those who love righteousness and hate lawlessness. From the time that God said to Abraham, 'In thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed,' hope of that blessed time has been strong in the mind of faithful men. For centuries holy men of old looked for the coming of the Messiah, whom God would use to establish his righteous government on earth. More than nineteen centuries ago the angels of heaven dramatically announced the birth of Jesus, and that company of heavenly messengers, at the bidding of Jehovah, sung the anthem: "Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men."  
—Luke 2: 14.

Thirty years after that memorable announcement the perfect man Jesus began his ministry on earth by making announcement in these words: "The kingdom of heaven is at hand." By that is understood that Jesus had been anointed by Jehovah God as and for the King of heaven and earth and that in due time he would rule the world in righteousness. For three and one-half years thereafter Jesus went about preaching the good news of God's provision for man and teaching the people the way of righteousness. In his work Jesus was constantly opposed by the men who claimed to be serving God and who were at that time called the clergy, made up of priests, Pharisees and

Sadducees. Their opposition to Jesus was due to the fact that, having undertaken to serve Jehovah God, they had become unfaithful and had fallen victims to the seductive influence of the Devil. For this reason Jesus said to them, in substance: 'God is not your Father, but you are the children of the Devil, because you do what he desires.' (John 8: 42-44) From that day till the present time every person who has faithfully followed in the footsteps of Jesus has been the object of Satan's attacks, and that visible opposition has been carried on chiefly by clergymen or those who claim to be representatives of God on earth. Jesus told his disciples it would be so and that such opposition would continue until the will of God is done on earth as it is done in heaven, and hence he taught them to pray for the coming of the Kingdom. (John 15: 19, 20; Matt. 6: 9, 10) The facts fully support that utterance of Jesus.

Shortly before his crucifixion Jesus told his disciples that he was going away and would receive the kingdom from Jehovah but that in due time he would come again and receive his faithful followers unto himself and set up his kingdom. For this cause the chief question in their minds and the one which they propounded to Jesus was: 'What shall be the proof of thy coming or end of the world and the kingdom?' (John 14: 1-3; Matt. 24: 1-7) After the resurrection of Jesus from the dead and his ascension into heaven the mind of each one of the apostles was illuminated and they discerned that the coming of Jesus Christ and the establishment of his kingdom was a long time in the future, and from that time they went about teaching the people who would hear, admonishing them to be faithful until the coming of the Lord. From the days of the apostles until the present time there have been faithful men and women on earth who have prayed and looked for the coming of Christ Jesus and the setting up of his kingdom of righteousness for the benefit of the children of men.

About the year 1880 (A.D.) a few honest and sincere followers of Christ Jesus came together in Pennsylvania for the studying of the Scriptures, particularly with reference to the second coming of the Lord and his kingdom. The result was that shortly thereafter a society was organized for the study and the proclamation of the truth of God's Word. That Society was first named ZION'S WATCH TOWER SOCIETY. Later incorporated, its name was changed to that of the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY. It was incorporated that the work of these men and women in proclaiming the truth might be carried forward in a lawful and orderly manner. Into this Society or organization came men and women from the various Catholic and Protestant church organizations in the land and there came also some from outside all church organizations. These faithful followers of Christ Jesus saw that the organizations on earth called "churches" are in fact human organizations and that their forms of worship and doctrines are out of harmony with Jehovah God and his kingdom under Christ. Having only one purpose in mind, these faithful ones then went about amongst the people, teaching them and instructing them concerning the second coming of Christ and his kingdom. Opposition to their work began at once, which opposition has at all times proceeded chiefly from priests, pastors and preachers of church organizations. Regardless of all opposition these faithful men and women have continued in their work of telling others concerning God and his gracious provision for the blessing of mankind as these truths are set forth in the Bible.

In the year 1909 it seemed proper that there should be formed a corporation under the laws of the State of New York to further the interest and the work above mentioned, and accordingly the PEOPLES PULPIT ASSOCIATION was organized. The same officers were elected to manage the corporation as those elected to manage the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY,

because the work of the two organizations is the same. This Christian missionary work progressed in America and outside thereof and it was deemed proper that a corporation be formed at London, England, and this was done in the year 1914 by the formation of the INTERNATIONAL BIBLE STUDENTS ASSOCIATION, being incorporated under the laws of Great Britain. These three corporations are one in fact, doing identically the same work.

As Jehovah continued to unfold the prophecies to his people and to make it more clearly appear to them what is his purpose, they saw that God has taken out from the nations of earth a "people for his name" and that those so taken out and separated from the world must be witnesses to the name of Jehovah. It was in the year 1931 that these faithful men and women saw that it is the will of God as expressed by the Scriptures that they should be called "Jehovah's witnesses", and for this reason they are today throughout the earth known and designated as "Jehovah's witnesses", and the aforementioned corporations carry on the work of Jehovah's witnesses as above stated. The chief objective and purpose of these witnesses is to bear testimony to the name of Jehovah, inform the people that he is the only true and almighty God, that Christ Jesus is his King, and that the kingdom of heaven is now at hand. This is the work they are doing.

When Satan inaugurated his rebellion against Jehovah in Eden God sentenced him to destruction. However, because Satan had challenged God and defied him to put men on earth who under severe test would remain true and faithful to Jehovah and righteousness, and in order to permit proof to be made that Satan is wickedly wrong and that Jehovah God is always right and righteous, God said to Satan: "But for this cause have I allowed thee to remain, in order to show thee my power; and in order that they may proclaim my name throughout all the earth." (Ex.

9:16, *Leeser*) This explains why God has permitted wickedness in the earth for such a long period of time. Now the time has come for the great controversy, issue or question between Jehovah and the Adversary to be settled for ever, and it will be settled, as the Scriptures show, at the battle of Armageddon. Just before that great conflict Jehovah God commands his witnesses to go throughout the land and to make publication of his name and of his kingdom under Christ. It is to be expected that Satan and his agents would bitterly oppose this work of Jehovah's witnesses; and it is even so. The witness work of advertising amongst the people the truth of Jehovah and his kingdom, and that it is the only hope of the world, continues to progress amidst great opposition from the enemy. The report that follows herein will enable you to see how that work is progressing, and what is being done by the enemy to interfere with it, and what you may expect in the near future. It is hoped that many who read this report will see that the conditions now obtaining on the earth are exactly what is to be expected and that, learning this in the light of the Scriptures, they may have hope for the future. The present unhappy conditions on earth will, as the Scriptures plainly show, culminate in the greatest tribulation ever known in the world. That will be the end of all trouble; and the great battle of Armageddon will be followed by the full and complete establishment of God's kingdom under Christ, and then lasting peace and prosperity will be on earth to stay and righteousness shall rule in every part of the earth. That will be the fulfilment of the angelic anthem of peace and good will sung 1900 years ago. May you study this report with profit to yourselves, and may you see your privilege to join in making known to others that Jehovah is God and that his kingdom is the hope of the human race.

**REPORT**

Jehovah's witnesses scattered throughout the earth are merely advertising agents of the Eternal King and his kingdom. That does not at all mean that they are engaged in propaganda work. The generally accepted definition of propaganda is this: An organization for the propagation of a doctrine or system, the purpose of which is to cause the membership of the system or organization to increase or enlarge. Religious organizations engage in propaganda, because each system of religion tries to increase its membership. The work of Jehovah's witnesses for his kingdom is entirely a different matter. The principles of Jehovah God are fixed, and never change, and Jehovah does not put forth an effort, nor authorize any creature to put forth an effort, to increase his organization or to propagate his doctrines. He furnishes the information to men to enable men to exercise their free will either to serve his kingdom of righteousness or to take the opposite course.

The divine commission given to Jehovah's witnesses is in these words: "The spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; to appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the Lord, that he might be glorified."—Isa. 61: 1-3.

Jehovah's chief purpose is the vindication of his name and to prove to all creation that he is supreme. "Zion" is the name given to his organization, including the faithful on earth who follow in the footsteps of Christ Jesus. Concerning such he says: "For Zion's sake will I not hold my peace, and for Jerusalem's

sake I will not rest, until the righteousness thereof go forth as brightness, and the salvation thereof as a lamp that burneth. And the [nations] shall see thy righteousness, and all kings thy glory; and thou shalt be called by a new name, which the mouth of the Lord shall name." (Isa. 62: 1, 2) The new name which he has given those devoted to him is "Jehovah's witnesses", and to them he says: "Ye are my witnesses, saith the Lord, and my servant whom I have chosen; that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he; before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me."—Isa. 43: 10.

Jehovah God has never made any attempt to convert the world, but he has merely taken out from the nations of the world a small number of persons whom he has commissioned to be his witnesses, and has commanded them to make known to the rulers of the nations and to the people that Jehovah is the Supreme One; that Christ Jesus is his Chief Officer and earth's rightful King; that he has enthroned Christ Jesus as King of the world, and he is the One who executes Jehovah God's judgments of vengeance against the workers of iniquity. These judgments were written long ago and are directed against Satan and all who serve him. God has placed his King upon his throne, and his work now is to oust Satan and his organization, and then will follow in the earth complete peace and prosperity. Then all men who render themselves in obedience to God's kingdom of righteousness will be given the opportunity for life everlasting. The work of Jehovah's witnesses, therefore, is merely to make known these truths, and if it pleases others to believe them and deport themselves accordingly, well and good for them; otherwise they fail to receive the benefits of God's gracious arrangements. The testimony concerning God and his kingdom is contained in the Word of God, which is the Bible, and is the truth; and Jehovah's witnesses are his agents or instruments to bear or bring this message of truth to others, that they may

have an opportunity to know Jehovah God and Christ Jesus. The proclamation of these truths brings no profit to Jehovah or to Christ Jesus, but for the people to know them is of vital importance, as it is written: "This is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent." (John 17: 3) There is nothing that is of so great interest, convenience and public necessity as the truth of and concerning Jehovah God and his kingdom.

#### AMERICA

The field for the work of Jehovah's witnesses embraces the entire earth, but the chief part of their witness work must be done in the nations called "Christendom". These nations, having assumed the name of the Lord, are in an implied covenant to do his will, and hence are in a more responsible position than the "heathen". The Lord commands, therefore, that notice and warning shall be particularly given to the nations called "Christendom". Within the borders of "Christendom" there are many persons of all nationalities. "Christendom" well corresponds to ancient Jerusalem, where the witness work was originally chiefly done, but which included other nationalities because of the cosmopolitan population there assembled.

The main office of the Society conducting the work of Jehovah's witnesses is situated at Brooklyn, New York. At the Brooklyn headquarters there are 196 persons jointly engaged in the work of the Society. These reside at 124 Columbia Heights and at the radio station on Staten Island, and all work as one family or organization. There are no bosses or masters amongst them, but all are on a common level. The relationship of master and servant does not exist. Expressed in commercial terms of this world, all of these persons are copartners, since each one has the same interest in the work. The organization and its work are such that each one has an assigned duty and that

duty is performed by each one as unto the Lord, each one knowing that his responsibility for faithfulness is to Jehovah God and not to human creatures. This arrangement assures an efficiency in service that could not be had in any other way. No one receives any pecuniary profit in the operation of the Society's work. Each and every one of the aforementioned workers has his or her board and lodging furnished by the Society, and in addition thereto each one receives the small allowance of fifteen dollars per month for clothing and other incidental expenses. Each one is a witness for Jehovah, and therefore each one is a preacher of the gospel of the kingdom of God.

All of Jehovah's witnesses throughout America, and in fact throughout the earth, are likewise copartners, each one striving to get on with the work of witnessing for the Kingdom in obedience to the commandments of the Lord. Each pioneer or field worker who goes from house to house with the literature is a preacher of the gospel, and in no sense of the word is engaged in any commercial work. The publications of the Society are first for the instruction, aid and comfort of the workers. The publications contain the Scriptural message that is of help and comfort to all persons who have a desire to learn the truth and to take their stand on the side of Jehovah God and his kingdom. The field workers are not commercial salesmen, and they are not engaged in any commercial business or transaction whatsoever. Those in the Society's work could not be hired for a money consideration to do the work that they are doing. Each one of them has made a covenant or an agreement with Jehovah God to do His will and to obey His commandments, and since God commands them to tell His message of truth and commands them to go and tell it to others, they do so in obedience to His commandments. In doing this work they are not attempting to earn a living of earthly bread. Most of their work is done at a large money sacrifice. For these witnesses to engage in this work

on a commercial basis would be a violation of their covenant with Jehovah God. They having agreed to obey the Lord God in doing this work, a failure to do the same on their part would mean the loss of everything to them, including life itself.

Having become the followers of Christ Jesus, these witnesses of Jehovah are followers of Christ Jesus and are under the immediate command of the Lord Jesus Christ, God's great Prophet of whom Moses was a type. They must hear and obey Christ Jesus, as it is written: "For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you. And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people." (Acts 3: 22, 23) For this reason it is easy to be seen that it would be wholly inconsistent for these witnesses to ask permission of any earthly organization to engage in giving the testimony of and concerning God's kingdom. The doctrines of and concerning the kingdom of God are set forth at pages twenty and following of the *Year Book* of this organization of 1934, to which reference is here made.

#### RECEIPTS AND EXPENDITURES

As long as this present world exists money will be used to measure the value of labor and other material things; hence it is needful to receive and pay out money in carrying on the work of the Society. The message of and concerning God's kingdom is furnished and published as a means of transmitting the truth to the people who desire to hear it. Almost every person is more likely to read a book or paper if he has spent some money to obtain the same or contributed some money for the particular cause which that book or paper represents. The publications of the Society, therefore, are exhibited to the people, and the people are given an opportunity to contribute a

small amount of money, which money is used exclusively to carry forward the educational, charitable and benevolent work of the Society. In the testimony delivered at the time of the exhibiting such books the witness names an amount that might be contributed. Where the persons to whom the testimony is given have no money, a less amount is taken, and often the books are given to them freely. Subscriptions are taken for the semimonthly magazines, *The Watchtower* and *The Golden Age*, all of which money goes into the funds of the Society and is used to carry on its work. No advertisements are carried by these publications, and hence there is no other source of revenue from them. Because the labor is furnished voluntarily, and because of the frugal and economical way in which Jehovah's witnesses live, a great amount of work at a minimum cost or expenditure of money is carried on.

The fiscal year of the Society is from October 1 to the following September 30. For the year of 1934, ending September 30 of that year, the receipts and expenditures, briefly summed up, are as follows:

Money received for books, booklets,  
Bibles, transcription machines,  
phonographs, subscriptions for  
*The Golden Age* and for  
*The Watchtower*, total . . . . . \$527,744.31

The total amount expended for raw material, manufacture of books, and advertising the gospel of the kingdom by radio, including field workers and the gift of books,  
to wit, the sum of . . . . . \$677,699.73

Thus it will be seen that the amount of money received by reason of all its publications is far less than that expended and thus leaves a deficit for the year of \$149,955.42.

This deficit, however, is offset in the following manner: Companies of Jehovah's witnesses in various parts of the country have paid in cash some accounts for the broadcasting of the message by radio, and these amounts have been credited to them by the Society as donations, and these amounts total \$64,072.93. In addition thereto the Society has received by bequests and by unsolicited donations from persons desiring to further the work of the Lord's kingdom, the total sum of \$120,990.91. The above two items total \$185,063.84. Subtracting therefrom the deficit of \$149,955.42 leaves a cash balance on hand at the end of the year of \$35,108.42 to proceed with the work for the ensuing year. The Society follows the policy of paying bills as it goes, and does not incur indebtedness, except the indebtedness on real estate, which is secured by mortgage.

#### **FACTORY**

The Society maintains at 117 Adams St., Brooklyn, New York, a printing and book-manufacturing plant, and all who serve there or at the Bethel home, where they are housed, do so voluntarily. They are not employees, but are coworkers in the Lord's witness work. At the office and factory the message is translated into many languages, the proof is carefully read, type is set, plates made, and the printing done, and the books and other publications are prepared and sent out to the field workers to carry the message to the people.

During the fiscal year there was an average of 135 workers in the factory and office. Each one is given experience at at least two jobs in the office and factory and is shifted from one to the other as the occasion requires. The factory operates eight and one-half hours per day, on an average, except Saturday, when the operation is one-half day. Working days for the past twelve months total 268 $\frac{1}{2}$ . Twice during the year, because of greater demands for literature, the factory was operated for two hours in the evening,

and during stated times there was an extra shift put on at night to meet the demand for literature.

### PRODUCTION

The production at the factory during the fiscal year exceeds that of the previous year. Books and booklets were produced during the year to the number of 25,740,032. This is an average of more than two million per month. The greater amount of these pieces of literature was booklets, which shows an increase over the previous year of more than five million. The bound books are less than they were the preceding year. In addition to books and booklets produced at the factory, magazines, calendars, catalogues and folders were printed and sent out, reaching a grand total of 84,661,201 pieces. Of this number, forty-two million were folders used to advertise radio and transcription lectures. A brief comparison of the production for the fiscal year and the preceding year is set forth as follows:

	1934	1933
Bound books	1,942,153	2,974,343
Booklets	23,797,880	18,339,816
<i>Watchtower</i>	1,330,145	1,240,450
<i>Golden Age</i>	2,408,400	3,451,300
Calendars	17,254	16,000
Catalogues	128,730	75,000
Radio folders	30,317,000	31,373,800
Transcription folders	11,697,000	
Odd job printing	13,021,137	4,175,006
Phonographs	1,245	
Transcription machines	258	
 TOTAL	 84,661,202	 61,645,715

The publications issued by the Society from its Brooklyn factory during the year were issued in 38 different languages. Below is given a list of the publications, and set opposite each one is the language in which it has been issued during the fiscal year:

- Harp of God*: English, Chinyanja, Yoruba.  
*Deliverance*: Arabic, Danish, Swedish.  
*Creation*: English, Danish.  
*Reconciliation*: Japanese, Spanish, Yoruba.  
*Government*: English, Finnish, Netherlandish, Spanish.  
*Prophecy*: French, Polish, Swedish.  
*Light, Book I*: Danish, Polish, Swedish.  
*Light, Book II*: Danish, Italian, Polish, Swedish.  
*Vindication, Book I*: Danish, Greek, Italian.  
*Vindication, Book II*: Finnish.  
*Preservation*: English, German.  
*Preparation*: English.  
*Year Book*: English, Swedish.
- Angels*: English.  
*Prosperity-Famine*: English.  
*Righteous Euler*: English, Italian, Slovak, Spanish, Ukrainian.  
*World Recovery*: English.  
*Beyond the Grave*: English.  
*His Works*: English.  
*Intolerance*: English, Greek, Italian, South African Dutch, Spanish, Ukrainian.  
*Dwelling the People*: English, Albanian, Arabic, Chinese, Danish, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Norwegian, Polish, Russian, Slovak, South African Dutch, Spanish, Swedish, Ukrainian.  
*Kingdom*: English, Fijian, Ilocano, Maori, Polish, Slovak, Tagalog, Yiddish, Yoruba, Zulu.  
*Who Is God?*: Bohemian, French, German, Japanese, Polish, South African Dutch.  
*What Is Truth?*: English, Chinese, French, German, Japanese, Norwegian, Polish, Russian, South African Dutch, Swedish.  
*Cause of Death*: English, German.  
*Hereafter*: English, Finnish, German, Norwegian, South African Dutch, Swedish.  
*Liberty*: English, French, German.  
*Final War*: English, Finnish, French, German, Norwegian, Swedish.  
*What You Need*: English.  
*Health and Life*: English, French, German.  
*Home and Happiness*: English, French.  
*Keys of Heaven*: English.  
*Heaven and Purgatory*: Spanish, Ukrainian.  
*Crimes and Calamities*: Spanish.  
*War or Peace*: Spanish, Ukrainian.  
*Where Are the Dead?*: English, Chinyanja, Maori, Spanish.  
*Hell*: Lithuanian.  
*Lord's Return*: Bulgarian.

*The Crisis:* English, Chinese, Chinyanja, Croatian, Ilocano, Japanese, Malay, Spanish, Tagalog, Turkish, Xosa, Yoruba.

*Standard:* Chinyanja, Sesuto, Xosa.

*Escape to the Kingdom:* Albanian, Arabic, Armenian, Chinese, Croatian, English, Finnish, German, Icelandic, Ilocano, Italian, Lithuanian, Norwegian, Polish, Russian, Sesuto, Slovak, South African Dutch, Spanish, Swedish, Tagalog, Ukrainian, Xosa, Yoruba.

### RAW MATERIAL

In order to produce the foregoing the Society must first provide the raw material. Before purchasing such raw material our purchasing department carefully examines and checks the various products, and contracts for the same in large quantities and at the lowest possible rate. During the year, for its publications the Society required 2,081 tons of paper. Ink made in our own factory, 36,794 pounds. In addition thereto it produced the paint to keep the property of the Society in preservation.

### MECHANICAL DEVICES

The Society has found it advantageous in advertising the Kingdom message to use transcription machines and phonographs, and these are called mechanical sound devices for preaching the gospel. The factory force at 117 Adams Street, for a portion of the time during the year, has been engaged in manufacturing these sound machines in order that they might be produced and placed in the hands of the workers at the least possible cost. These machines the Society has paid for, of course, and furnished many of the field workers with them, while other field workers have contributed money to help pay for such machines; and companies have contributed money that they might have a machine for the reproduction of lectures in their respective vicinities. During the year there have been manufactured transcription machines to the number of 258, with microphone attachments to the number of 100; phonographs, to the number of 1,245. The

cost of this is included in the expenditures mentioned aforesaid.

### MACHINERY

It is needful from time to time to replace the machinery for this manufacturing work, also to provide trucks and automobiles for the transmission to the shipping points and for the distribution of literature in the field and for preaching the gospel by going from place to place.

### FAMILY AT BETHEL

The entire company of 196 persons hereinbefore mentioned constitute the family of Bethel, meaning the "House of God". They come from different parts of the country, having heretofore engaged in various vocations, but at the Bethel all are engaged in one common cause of preaching the gospel of God's kingdom. All those working at the factory are provided with room, board and other accommodations at 124 Columbia Heights, the Bethel home. During the year there have been six separate and distinct periods set aside for special witness work, in which the Bethel family has participated; and for the purpose of permitting them to have this opportunity at stated times the factory, office and home have been closed. Other field workers will be interested to know that during the year those constituting the Bethel family, and who have been able to participate in the special field service, have done so, and their work is as follows:

Number of workers	192
Books placed	1,516
Booklets placed	58,801
Total books and booklets placed	60,317

In connection with this part of the work an automobile for the transcription machine has been used during three months of the year. In that time 67 meetings have been held; 107 lectures given. This has been an

added means of getting the message to the people in and about the city of New York. During the year men were sent out from the Bethel family to serve companies in other places, to the number of 184.

#### ACCOMMODATIONS

In furnishing necessary accommodations of room and food for the Bethel family the Society provides an orderly arrangement. The position of supply steward is maintained, whose duties are to see that food is provided and brought into the family for preparation and consumption. To supply such food the Society maintains and operates a garden on its property on Staten Island, where vegetables are produced for the benefit of the family; also a place in Florida, where vegetables are likewise produced for the family during the winter. The object is to supply the Bethel family with food at the most economical price and which at the same time is healthful and for their best physical welfare. The Society also provides a maintenance steward, whose business is to look after the maintenance of the property and to see that the material is furnished for repairs in keeping the property in condition. All this work is done voluntarily by those who are devoted to the Lord and his kingdom cause.

#### SHIPMENTS

The Brooklyn factory manufactures books, booklets and other literature, not only for the United States, but for Canada, Great Britain, South Africa, Australia, and other places. Books dispatched or shipped from the Brooklyn office during the year exceed that of any previous year, total shipment amounting to 23,053,126 volumes. These were sent out in many different languages and to many parts of the earth. In shipments this is an increase over the previous year of 3,440,609. A more detailed statement of these shipments is as follows:

Branch Offices	8,550,181
Companies	8,953,531
Pioneers	4,451,466
Auxiliaries	914,787
Miscellaneous	183,161
 Total	 23,053,126

To facilitate the shipment for distribution within the borders of the United States and adjoining territory the Society maintains depots at Los Angeles, Seattle, and St. Louis, the depot formerly maintained at Oakland, California, being moved from there to Los Angeles. Shipments from the Brooklyn factory are made in carload lots or large consignments to these respective depots and from there reshipped for distribution amongst the people. As the commercial depression increases, the demand from the people for literature concerning God's kingdom increases. Otherwise stated, many sober-minded persons desire to know more about God's purposes and hence avail themselves of the opportunity to read the Scriptural helps provided.

By way of comparison, the book *Preparation* had the widest circulation during the year and hence the largest amount shipped from the factory. This indicates that many more people are anxious to know what the preparation for Armageddon means, and there is only one way to find the correct explanation, and that is in the Scriptures, and the book *Preparation* helps to understand the Scriptures on this point in particular. The greater demand for booklets is due to the fact that many persons are not able to provide themselves with all the books and they feel too independent to permit the same to be given to them. Their desire is to help as far as they can to get the message to the people. When it is considered that the publications were issued in 38 different languages from the Brooklyn office this year, and all together, English

and foreign, 171 different publications issued and shipped to every part of the earth, one may have some conception of the work that must be done in order to get this message of the Kingdom to the people. In addition to the books manufactured and shipped from the Brooklyn factory, Bibles to the number of 20,726 have been sent out. This shows a healthy increase amongst the people desiring to know more about God's Word.

In addition to the foregoing shipment of books and booklets the *Golden Age* magazine and the *Watchtower* magazine were printed and made ready and placed in the mails to the number of 3,738,545; also catalogues, placards, calendars, radio and transcription folders and other material that was manufactured and shipped; also the *Year Book* prepared and shipped out. In addition to this, transcription and phonograph machines were manufactured and shipped. The packing and shipping entail a lot of work, and the furnishing and packing of cartons, books and other material that is used for shipment. The shipping charges alone during the year cost the Society approximately \$100,000.00.

By way of illustrating the efficiency and the zeal put forth by the brethren in the office, who manufacture these books and booklets, the following is stated: The booklet *Prosperity-Famine* copy was furnished on August 12. This, of course, had to be proofread, set in type, made up into pages and the manufacture begun, and on September 5 the first order of three million was completed and on the way to the different parts of the country. Of course, this was an extra rush in order to get the booklet into the hands of the people before the "union prayer meeting of the clergy and distinguished men" began.

In addition to the English publications shipped from the Brooklyn office during the year there were also shipped in foreign languages the following:

<b>Afrikaans</b>	<b>72,978</b>	<b>Lithuanian</b>	<b>13,131</b>
<b>Albanian</b>	<b>11,063</b>	<b>Malay</b>	<b>4,322</b>
<b>Arabic</b>	<b>29,887</b>	<b>Maori</b>	<b>10,903</b>
<b>Armenian</b>	<b>12,783</b>	<b>Netherlandish</b>	<b>10,709</b>
<b>Bohemian</b>	<b>11,090</b>	<b>Norwegian</b>	<b>12,363</b>
<b>Bulgarian</b>	<b>4,603</b>	<b>Polish</b>	<b>115,855</b>
<b>Chinese</b>	<b>52,394</b>	<b>Portuguese</b>	<b>15,399</b>
<b>Chinyanja</b>	<b>16,305</b>	<b>Rumanian</b>	<b>2,723</b>
<b>Croatian</b>	<b>9,550</b>	<b>Russian</b>	<b>35,392</b>
<b>Danish</b>	<b>50,008</b>	<b>Serbian</b>	<b>2,564</b>
<b>Estonian</b>	<b>116</b>	<b>Sesuto</b>	<b>5,470</b>
<b>Fijian</b>	<b>2,496</b>	<b>Slovak</b>	<b>79,705</b>
<b>Finnish</b>	<b>24,022</b>	<b>Slovenian</b>	<b>5,305</b>
<b>French</b>	<b>68,266</b>	<b>Spanish</b>	<b>425,045</b>
<b>German</b>	<b>138,374</b>	<b>Swedish</b>	<b>91,606</b>
<b>Greek</b>	<b>62,620</b>	<b>Tagalog</b>	<b>34,131</b>
<b>Hebrew</b>	<b>1,143</b>	<b>Turkish</b>	<b>5,364</b>
<b>Hungarian</b>	<b>14,247</b>	<b>Ukrainian</b>	<b>66,357</b>
<b>Icelandic</b>	<b>8,161</b>	<b>Xosa</b>	<b>10,851</b>
<b>Ilocano</b>	<b>15,294</b>	<b>Yiddish</b>	<b>21,100</b>
<b>Italian</b>	<b>164,763</b>	<b>Yoruba</b>	<b>55,698</b>
<b>Japanese</b>	<b>22,810</b>	<b>Zulu</b>	<b>5,120</b>
<b>Korean</b>	<b>16</b>		
<b>Lettish</b>	<b>294</b>	<b>Total</b>	<b>1,822,396</b>

#### PUBLICATION OR DISTRIBUTION

The chief work of Jehovah's witnesses is the publication of the gospel or good news of the Kingdom. This is done in obedience to God's commandments. To his witnesses Jehovah says: 'Ye are my witnesses that I am God; go and tell the people.' (Isa. 43:10, 12; 6:9) Jesus and his disciples did that very thing. All of his true followers must do likewise, because these are called to walk in his steps. (1 Pet. 2:21) Everyone who becomes a disciple of the Lord Jesus Christ must obey his commandments. Moses was a type of Christ Jesus, and concerning the Lord Jesus Christ God caused Moses to declare and afterward the apostle Peter to repeat: "For Moses truly said unto the

fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things, whatsoever he shall say unto you. And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people." (Acts 3: 22, 23) Jehovah's witnesses, therefore, have no alternative. If they would please the Lord God and receive his approval they must obey the commandments of the Lord Jesus Christ. Amongst the commandments is the following: "And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations: and then shall the end come." (Matt. 24: 14) This latter commandment especially applies to the present time and must be performed now by everyone who is of Jehovah's capital organization. That Jehovah's witnesses are doing today exactly what Jesus and the apostles did is shown by the following scriptures as recorded in Luke 9: 1-6 and in Acts 20: 20. Jesus sent forth his disciples to preach the gospel from house to house, and in obedience to his commandments, as stated by the apostle Paul, they went from house to house telling the people concerning God and his kingdom. Now the time has come when the world has ended, and this good news of the Kingdom must be proclaimed to the people, and the Lord has commanded that it shall be published to them.

Books must first be manufactured before they can be published. Publication means notification to the people either by words, writing or printing; a proclamation or promulgation, such as the publication of the gospel. It consists of the act of offering a book or booklet to the public either for a money consideration, contribution or gratuitous distribution. Let it be kept in mind that Jehovah's witnesses are his publication agents, that the gospel is published by reason of his commandments, and that the men and women go from house to house exhibiting the gospel of the Kingdom

in printed form and thus publish it or make it known to others as God has commanded them.

Under the immediate jurisdiction of the Brooklyn office are the United States and other countries, and islands of the sea, to the number of twenty-one in all. In these various places Jehovah's witnesses, as publishing agents, have gone from house to house exhibiting the literature to the people and placing the same in the hands of those who desire them. Within this immediate jurisdiction testimonies have been given to the number of 25,537,791; there have been placed in the hands of the people within this jurisdiction during the year books and booklets to the number of 11,325,908. This is an increase in the publication or distribution of books over the year 1933 of 1,453,573.

#### OPPOSITION

The above-mentioned work of publication has been done in the face of tremendous opposition. This opposition has come chiefly from the religionists. Clergymen have incited police officers and magistrates, and others, to wage a bitter warfare of persecution against Jehovah's witnesses. The reason for such opposition and persecution should be made clear, and the only way to make it clear is to call attention to God's Word; which is here done.

Light and darkness are diametrically opposed to each other. Concerning Jehovah God it is written: "God is light, and in him is no darkness at all." Jehovah God is the fountain of light and life. Concerning him it is written: "Bless Jehovah, O my soul! Jehovah my God thou art exceeding great, majesty and state hast thou put on: wrapping thyself in light as a mantle, stretching out the heavens as a tent-curtain."—*Psalm 104: 1, 2, Roth. Pss.*

Jehovah God sent his beloved Son to earth to bear witness to the truth, and concerning him it is written: "In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

That was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world."—John 1: 4, 9.

Jesus declared: "I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life." (John 8: 12) Jesus came to bear witness to the truth, and every one who is of the truth must do likewise. Jehovah's witnesses, therefore, are bearers of the light of the gospel of God's kingdom. Concerning them it is written: "Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day." (1 Thess. 5: 5) Again, concerning those who are the followers of Jesus it is written: "For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light. And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them."—Eph. 5: 8, 11.

Satan the Devil is the prince of darkness, because all his deeds are wicked. For long he has been the god or ruler of this wicked world, which he has ruled in darkness and wickedness. (Eph. 6: 12; 2 Cor. 4: 3, 4) Satan is the great adversary of Jehovah God and of the Lord Jesus Christ. He hates the light and loves darkness, and all of his agents follow in his lead. All opposition to the light is engendered by Satan and is carried on by him and his active agents. Satan, the god of this world, employs fraud and deception and by this means blinds the minds of the people that do not believe the truth, and this he does lest the light of the glorious gospel of Jesus Christ should shine unto them. (2 Cor. 4: 4) It is written: "All things that are reproved are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is light." (Eph. 5: 13) The truth of God's Word, therefore, makes manifest or publishes the fact of the wickedness of Satan and his agents and reproves such, and hence calls forth the wicked opposition of Satan.

Jehovah God has taken out of the world Christ Jesus and his faithful followers as his witnesses. Christ Jesus is the great witness, the Faithful and True Wit-

ness, and his followers are and must be witnesses to Jehovah. (Acts 15: 14-16) These witnesses must show forth the praises of Jehovah God and Christ Jesus, who have called them out of the darkness of Satan's organization and given them the light of truth. (1 Pet. 2: 9, 10) Concerning the followers of the Lord Jesus Christ the apostle says for himself and all who are of like mind: "For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake. For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ."—2 Cor. 4: 5, 6.

These scriptures show that the followers of the Lord Jesus Christ, who are of Jehovah's witnesses, must be publishers of the truth. To them has been committed the testimony of Jesus Christ, which testimony they must deliver by going from house to house and telling the people about the Kingdom, and this they must do regardless of all opposition. Necessarily they are the objects of Satan's wrath, and he seeks their destruction. One of the names of Satan the Devil is "Dragon", and concerning him and Jehovah's witnesses it is written: "And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ." (Rev. 12: 17) The woman mentioned in this last text is God's organization. The remnant mentioned therein are Jehovah's faithful witnesses, a few of whom are now on earth; and these are the seed of God's organization, the children of Jehovah and his woman. (Isa. 54: 13) These faithful ones keep the commandments of Jehovah God, and in order to do so they must deliver the testimony of Jesus Christ, which has been committed to them.

The foregoing scriptures clearly prove that there is a deadly conflict between that which is light and that which is darkness; that Jehovah, Christ Jesus and the

faithful followers of Jesus stand for the light of truth; that Satan the Devil is the personification of darkness, and all who practice the works of darkness are the agents of Satan. Upon this point, says the scripture: "Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?" (Rom. 6:16) It is therefore clear to be seen that those who oppose God and his work are the servants of the Devil. This is true regardless of what they may claim to be.

The method employed by Satan is that of fraud and deceit. His name *Devil* means "deceiver"; and the one means employed to deceive the people more than any other one thing has been and is that of religion. From the days of Nimrod down to the present time religion has been used to blind the people and to turn them away from God and his light of truth.

The greatest religious system that exists on earth, or ever did exist on earth, is the Roman Catholic hierarchy, controlled by a few men and under which have been brought millions of people of honest desires. Satan has used the Roman Catholic hierarchy to blind millions of people. They have been taught error. The Hierarchy has claimed to represent God and the Bible, and at the same time has kept the people in ignorance of what the Bible contains. There are millions of good, honest people who are under the Catholic organization that would turn to God if the eyes of their understanding were opened to the truth. The obligation is laid upon those of Jehovah's witnesses to take to such persons the truth in order that they may have a chance to have the eyes of their understanding opened.

The mere fact that men or organizations made up of men claim to represent God and Christ is no evidence whatsoever that they do represent God and Christ. In the days of the apostles men were claiming and attempting to do this very thing. They were

the apostles of the Devil, but transformed themselves apparently into ministers of light. Concerning this it is written: "For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works." (2 Cor. 11:13-15) The religious teachers when Jesus was on earth claimed to be sons of God, and claimed to represent him, and yet they were the active agents of the Devil, keeping the people in darkness and doing violence unto God's kingdom and his anointed King, Christ Jesus. Concerning this Jesus said to those religionists, as it is written: "Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it."—John 8:41-44.

This Scriptural proof is here set out in order to show that the opposition to Jehovah's witnesses originates with the Devil and is carried on by the Devil's representatives, and that the chief part of the active opposition that is visible to men is at the instance of the clergy, and particularly the Roman Catholic hierarchy. The very basis of Satan's organization, which he uses to persecute those doing right, is commerce or traffic; and this is shown by the Scriptures. (Ezek. 28:15-18) The method used is to charge Jehovah's witnesses with being engaged in a commercial business and to cause their arrest under ordinances which

prohibit traffic, such as hawking and peddling. These charges against Jehovah's witnesses are wholly false, because they are not in anywise engaged in a commercial business. They could not be hired for money to engage in the work in which they are engaged. They are doing the witness work wholly in obedience to God's commandments, because they love God and love to do his will.

During the year, within the United States alone, 340 of Jehovah's faithful witnesses have been arrested on charges of violating the commercial laws and thrown into prison. The greater number of these arrests have taken place within the state of New Jersey, and it is well known that the one who is backing these persecutions is the Catholic bishop, known as the bishop of Trenton, who gives orders to Roman Catholic policemen to lie in wait for or search out Jehovah's witnesses, arrest them and throw them into jail. Notwithstanding the fact that the courts of New Jersey have repeatedly held that these witnesses of Jehovah are not violating the ordinances, the arrests and persecution continue. Policemen have remarked that they receive their orders and must carry them out, and their orders come from the clergy.

These arrests and persecutions God long ago foretold in the prophecy of the eighty-third Psalm. The Lord foretells a conspiracy formed by Satan and his agents to destroy Jehovah's witnesses and their work, because they are telling the truth. (Ps. 83:2-5) The foregoing arrests in the United States, as well as the arrests of Jehovah's witnesses in other parts of the earth, are overt acts on the part of these conspirators against God and his anointed ones, and the purpose of which is to prevent them from being witnesses to Jehovah and making known the truth to others. It is a conflict of darkness against the light. The fact that opposition continues, however, is no reason whatsoever for Jehovah's witnesses to cease their efforts. They must go on and bear testimony to the truth.

**PERMITS**

Certain municipalities have enacted ordinances which declare that no one shall go from house to house without first receiving a permit so to do, which permit is to be signed by an officer of the police department. It is attempted to apply this law to Jehovah's witnesses. No doubt if Jehovah's witnesses should apply for a permit the same would be denied, but to apply for such permit would be an insult to Jehovah God and in disobedience to his law. No witness of Jehovah could apply for a permit without jeopardizing his own eternal welfare, and the reason they do not apply for such permits is set forth as follows, to wit: Jehovah God is supreme, and his law is above every law. He sent Jesus Christ into the world to do as God had commanded him. What Jesus did and what he commands his followers to do they must do. They must obey God and Christ Jesus, and not man, when man's laws conflict with God's laws.

The United States of America was founded as a government upon the announced principles of equality, freedom of speech, and freedom of worship of Almighty God. The supreme court of the United States in the case of Church vs. United States, reported in 143, United States Reports, page 457, holds that the United States is a Christian nation. Justice Brewer in that case reviews such matters of the worship of Almighty God or the practice of Christianity, and amongst other things says: "Beyond all these matters no purpose of action against religion can be imputed to any legislation, State or Nation, because this is a religious nation. This is historically true. From the discovery of the continent to the present hour there is a single voice making this confirmation. . . . These and many other matters that might be noticed add a volume of unofficial declarations to the mass of organic utterances that this is a Christian nation."

The supreme court of New Jersey, where many of the foregoing persecutions have been carried on, as early as 1837 in the case of State vs. Robert Lash, 16 N. J. L. 380, held that this is a Christian nation and recognized the Bible as authority. In fact, the courts throughout the United States have uniformly held that the United States is a Christian nation and that the states are a part of that Christian nation.

By reason of the foregoing decisions of the courts, as well as the Constitutional provision, the United States and all state authorities are precluded and estopped from denying that the Bible containing the commandments of Jehovah God and Christ Jesus is the superior authority and therefore above the authority of any state, nation, municipality or other legal entity. The presumption must therefore be indulged that all of the lawmaking bodies in America, in enacting laws concerning peddling and hawking, have no purpose or intention of interfering in the practice of true Christianity by those following the footsteps of Jesus. A legislative body or municipality could not enact an ordinance or law diametrically opposed to the Word of Jehovah God and at the same time truly claim to be a Christian nation. If the laws relative to hawkers and peddlers can be enforced against Jehovah's witnesses, then the claim that the American government is a Christian nation is an absurdity. This point is here made to show that the prosecution of Jehovah's witnesses for preaching the gospel is therefore against even the laws of the land of the United States.

Above all, this persecution is against Jehovah God and Christ Jesus and his kingdom. The apostles took the lead and made the rule which Jehovah's witnesses must now follow. When they were being sent out by the Lord Jesus himself to preach the gospel they did not go to towns or municipalities and ask for permission so to do. They went in obedience to God's commandments and the commandments of the Lord

Jesus Christ. They were often arrested and brought into courts, charged with a violation of the law for speaking and preaching and publishing the gospel of the Lord's kingdom. On one occasion the presiding judge of the court addressing these faithful followers of Jesus Christ said: "Did not we straitly command you, that ye should not teach in this name? and, behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's blood upon us. Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men."—Acts 5: 28, 29.

On another occasion the apostle, when commanded by the courts not to teach in the name of Christ Jesus, replied: "Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye. For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard." (Acts 4: 19, 20) It is therefore manifest that these witnesses of Jehovah could not obey the Lord God and the Lord Jesus Christ and at the same time ask for permission to go from house to house to preach the gospel.

It is also clear to be seen that Satan the Devil, through his religious agents, leads this persecution; and it may be expected that the persecution of Jehovah's witnesses will continue until the Lord himself rises up at Armageddon and smites the persecutors as a vindication of his own name. To his faithful followers Jesus said concerning these persecutors: "These things I command you, that ye love one another. If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. . . . But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me."—John 15: 17-21.

As an evidence that the act of Jehovah's witnesses in going from door to door to publish and publishing

the message of God's kingdom in book and booklet form is not a commercial transaction, we cite the fact that the publication of the message in book and booklet form done by the Society during the fiscal year was done at a far greater expense than the amount of money contributed for the books and booklets. The deficit during the year amounts to \$149,955.42. In addition to that, during the year the Society furnished to the pioneers in the field credit to the amount of \$15,163.17. Over and above this, many of the pioneers or Jehovah's witnesses going from place to place do so at their own expense, paying out money which they have earned and saved while engaged in other work prior to entering the pioneer service. The alleged violation of the commercial laws, such as of peddling and hawking, is seized upon as a pretext and subterfuge to cause the arrest and persecution of Jehovah's witnesses, because no other ground can be found to so arrest them. Regardless of this persecution, however, Jehovah's witnesses will continue to obey God and Christ Jesus as God's Chief Officer, and not to obey man. They will do nothing to violate the law of God, nor the law of man that is in harmony with God's law. They will do injury to no man, but will do good to all as opportunity affords. This they have been doing throughout the year in carrying the gospel of the Kingdom to the people.

In passing, however, we call attention again to the Scriptures, that the Lord Jesus declared that the ill-treatment administered to his faithful followers he counts as ill-treatment to himself and that in due time the persecutors of his witnesses shall receive a just recompense. These persecutors are likened unto goats who have ill-used his faithful followers, and concerning them the words of Jesus are quoted, as follows: "Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was an hungry, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye

gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. . . . Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me."—Matt. 25: 41-43, 45.

### RADIO

Another means employed for the publication of the gospel of God's kingdom under Christ is the radio. Men have assumed to regulate the radio as though it were a man-made invention. Radio is God's means provided for making known the truth, and which should be employed exclusively in the proclamation of the truth. Like all things else, however, the Devil has attempted to use the radio exclusively, and God suffers or permits Satan to remain and carry on his nefarious work until due time for his destruction. (Ex. 9:16) The Lord God permits his faithful witnesses, however, to still have some use of the radio in the proclamation of the truth. In the United States, during the year, 357 radio stations have been employed from time to time to broadcast the Kingdom message. Stations outside of the United States have been used to the number of 60. There have been fourteen chain programs put on in the United States in that time. Today many radio stations are broadcasting the truth by means of electrical transcription, and this in the face of the vicious campaign of opposition carried on by the Catholic hierarchy. During the year, by electrical transcription radio programs have been broadcast to the number of 20,743. This part of the publication of the Kingdom message has entailed the expenditure of a great amount of money, but the Lord has graciously provided this, putting it in the hearts of others to contribute the money for that purpose. Outside of the United States radio stations have been employed to broadcast the truth in the following countries: Argentina, Australia, Belgium, Brazil, Canada, Chile, China, Cuba, Estonia, France, Mexico, Para-

guay, and Uruguay. The total number of stations on earth broadcasting the truth during the year is, to wit, 417. In addition to this the Society owns and operates radio station WBBR, which broadcasts the truth each time it is on the air.

Early in the year the Roman Catholic hierarchy began an organized campaign of malicious falsehood, misrepresentation and opposition to the Kingdom message being broadcast in America. That institution by the employment of threats and boycott methods attempted to force the radio stations to cancel contracts and to refuse to further broadcast the Watch Tower programs. They succeeded in getting some contracts canceled, and through their publications repeatedly stated that within a short time the Watch Tower programs would be off the air.

#### PROTEST

Early in 1934 a petition was circulated throughout the United States, protesting against this unholy and unrighteous persecution of Jehovah's witnesses in opposition to the radio programs. That petition was signed by approximately two and one-half million radio listeners, and was presented to Congress at Washington, D.C., on the 24th of January, 1934. Congressman McFadden, supported by others, introduced a bill in Congress to prevent such discrimination, boycott and other threatening methods to prevent the broadcasting of programs. The Society submitted a volume of evidence in support of the petition. The net result was that Congress enacted a law placing all communication under one commission, and that commission is now carrying on a hearing in Washington, which hearing is to be reported to the Congress next session relative to the enactment of further laws as to broadcasting of programs of all kinds. In the meantime Jehovah's witnesses continue to furnish the programs to the stations which broadcast them for hire.

## CHAIN PROGRAMS

Lectures by the president of the Society were broadcast by a network of radio stations in the United States during the year as follows, to wit:

THE TRUE GOD	October 1, 1933	111 stations
THE MIMIC GOD	October 8, 1933	111 stations
WHY SERVE JEHOVAH	October 15, 1933	111 stations
VALUE OF KNOWLEDGE AND UNDERSTANDING	October 27, 1933	4 stations
CAN THE WORLD BE RECOVERED?	November 12, 1933	2 stations
	March 25, 1934	
Public address, Shrine Auditorium, Los Angeles, Calif.: WORLD CONTROL, broadcast simultaneously over		151 stations

In addition to the above, WBBR and other stations broadcast chain programs as follows:

FLEE Now	May 5, 1934	5 stations
PROTEST	June 10, 1934	2 stations
FAMINE-PROSPERITY	June 17, 1934	4 stations

From Toronto, Canada, a public address delivered at Mapleleaf Gardens, July 8, on the subject FLEE Now, was transmitted by private wire to the United States, and ten stations broadcast that message. On August 12, subject, PRAYING FOR PROSPERITY, WBBR and two other stations broadcast the same.

## MECHANICAL DEVICES

Seeing the opposition arising to broadcasting the truth by radio, the Lord put it into the mind of his

people to prepare other means for publishing the truth. This means employed has been by the mechanical device of electrical transcription machines and phonographs operated during the year. In the United States 1,757 transcription machines and phonographs have been employed to broadcast the message. At such meetings there has been a total attendance of 1,901,821, at which meetings books and booklets were placed to the number of 64,918. Eight transcription machines have been employed in the following places, to wit: Bahamas, Canal Zone, Colombia, Costa Rica, and Cuba.

#### PHONOGRAFS

During the year the Society has undertaken to manufacture portable phonographs and to prepare records that require  $4\frac{1}{2}$  minutes to reproduce the speech, and each one of these records contains a brief and succinct speech concerning some part of God's Word of truth relating to Jehovah and his kingdom. Up to the end of the fiscal year there had been manufactured and distributed phonographs to the number of 1,245, and phonograph records containing the message of the Kingdom to the number of 17,894. A large number of orders are on hand both for phonographs and for records. This bids fair to be one of the better means of publishing the truth that shall have the blessing of the Lord and bring great comfort to the people. These records can be run on any ordinary phonograph, and it will be a great privilege for Jehovah's witnesses, Jonadabs and any others who wish to have a part in this work to place these machines and phonograph records in the hands of the people. The machines and the records are furnished to the public at cost, thus enabling the people to have an opportunity of hearing the message in their homes with the least possible cost to them. In these times of great depression many are unable to have radios and the transcription machines are too expensive for them to

have; many are too poor even to own an ordinary portable phonograph; but it is the privilege of the pioneers and company workers to take these phonographs to the homes of those who are unable, and permit them to hear the message of truth. The phonographs have in many instances opened the way to introduce the message of God's kingdom, and this publication has brought much comfort and blessing to those who have heard. During the ensuing year this matter should be pressed, and all of those devoted to the Lord should put forth their endeavors to get these phonograph records containing a brief message of the Kingdom into the hands of the people.

The Society has also equipped some trucks with transcription machines and amplifiers. It is expected that more of these will be put in the field, which, by means of a mast reaching sixty feet or more in the air, and at the top of which is a large public-address horn, the message can be heard for a mile or more. By this means a lecture can be put on in a small town of a thousand or more and be heard by the inhabitants of the entire town. All praise is due to Jehovah God and his anointed King, who provides the ways and means for the publication of his kingdom. Truly God's people are going forward now advertising the King and his kingdom, and, regardless of all opposition, are having much joy in doing this work.

#### PUBLISHERS

Long ago God declared that he would take out of the world a people for his name and near the time of Armageddon these would constitute the remnant of his people, whom he would send forth as publishers of the message of his kingdom. These publishers may well be designated under the following divisions: pioneers, auxiliaries, sharpshooters, company workers, and regional service directors. Pioneers are those who, putting aside their worldly vocations, find it opportune to spend practically all their time in the field pub-

lishing the message of the Kingdom. To be a pioneer one is required to devote a minimum of 110 hours per month to the actual work of bearing testimony to the people. These are in no wise book agents, nor booksellers, but are preachers of the gospel, who carry the message to the people in printed form and afford them an opportunity to hear of God and his King and kingdom and to take their stand on the proper side. Auxiliaries are those who find it impossible to devote as much time to the field service as that required of pioneers. To be an auxiliary one must devote 50 hours per month to calling upon the people and exhibiting to them the gospel of the Kingdom.

Company publishers are those who are associated with the local company of Jehovah's witnesses and who devote their spare time, especially on Sundays, to going from house to house and preaching the gospel of the Kingdom. They find it necessary, of course, to earn their support for themselves and families, and when their work is done in this behalf, instead of wasting time they employ it by bearing testimony to Jehovah's King.

Sharpshooters are those who, employed in some other matter of necessity to earn their food, take advantage of their opportunities given to them of giving testimony to the truth. None of the foregoing publishers are in any wise book agents or booksellers. They are not engaged in any commercial business. Money is not the inducement for them to engage in the work, but they publish the message of the Kingdom because God has commanded all of his anointed ones thus to do and they love God and delight to obey his commandments.

It is interesting to note that in 1924 the total number of pioneers in the field was 437; auxiliaries, 364; whereas ten years later, to wit, in 1934, these publishers in the field numbered, to wit, pioneers, 1,976; auxiliaries, 946; making a total of 2,922. Added to these publishers are those in the various companies

scattered throughout the territory. The monthly average of company publishers and sharpshooters in the United States exceeds that of 1933 by 3,300. During the year they have increased their hours of service more than a half million hours over those of any previous year. The literature placed in the hands of the people by the companies and sharpshooters during the year shows an increase of 725,000 over the previous year. In addition to the books and booklets, they have distributed 774,706 copies of special editions of the *Golden Age* magazine.

The enrollment of all these publishers, namely, pioneers, auxiliaries, company publishers, and sharpshooters, is kept by the service department at the 117 Adams Street office. Regular reports are made by the field workers, and the work of publishing the Kingdom message is done under the direct supervision of the service department. Embraced within the company of publishers aforementioned there is a goodly number of those called "Jonadabs". By a "Jonadab" is meant one who has taken his stand on the side of the Lord and who is serving the Lord by giving testimony as opportunity affords. In many instances these Jonadabs are even more zealous than others who have been in the company organization for years past. These see their privilege of serving God, and it is such a joy to them that they cease not to serve God day and night as opportunity comes to them. Surely the Lord must love these who have recently come to a knowledge of the truth and who show so much zeal.

The combined efforts of the publishers aforesaid during the year 1934 has resulted in putting in the hands of the people in the United States the total number of 11,325,908 books and booklets, as hereinbefore stated. In addition to this literature they have visited the people and talked to them, obtained their signatures to petitions and brought them words of comfort and encouragement in this time of great distress and oppression.

**TESTIMONY CARDS**

These publishers of the message of the Kingdom learn to be more efficient as the days go by. It is not many words that is required, but a clear and succinct statement of the purpose of this publishing work that is beneficial to the people. A card bearing a brief testimony has been prepared and placed in the hands of the workers, and these cards have been used with splendid result. From every part of the field come the reports that the card method is the most effective way of giving the testimony. The publisher approaches a person and hands him a card and requests him to read it. Silently reading a card a person is much more likely to be interested. His attention is undivided, and when he sees that the purpose of this work is to bring to his attention information that is of so much importance at the present time, if he is one of good will he is likely to ask for literature and make a contribution to help others to understand the wonderful message of the Kingdom. When it is taken into consideration that during the year testimonies to the number of 25,303,055 have been given it can be well appreciated that Jehovah's witnesses in the United States have been diligent and that many have heard about the Kingdom. It can be more keenly appreciated than ever before that these are in truth and in fact publicity agents of the Lord. Woe be unto those who oppose God's publicity agents! These men and women who act as his publishers are his servants. They are not trying to do injury to anyone. They are not even attempting to reap any profit from anyone. They are bearers of the fruits of God's kingdom, holding forth the light, that those in darkness may see the light and advance to a point that will be helpful to them.

**DIVISIONAL CAMPAIGNS**

During the fiscal year there were five divisional campaigns carried forth in the territory embraced in the United States. Engaged in this work were 79 di-

visions; automobiles employed, 3,057; witnesses engaged in the work, 13,436; hours employed, 179,202; testimonies given, 1,096,986, books and booklets placed in the hands of the people during these campaigns, 321,824. Transcription meetings during the campaigns to the number of 152 were held, with an attendance of 9,218. This shows a healthful increase in this department of the publishing work during the year.

In these divisional campaigns a number of companies assemble within a given territory and by united action make an effort to cover that territory within a certain time. This united action not only is a strong witness to the name of Jehovah God, but results in calling to attention of many more people that God's kingdom is the hope of the human race and nothing else provides that hope.

#### INTERNATIONAL

During the year two of the campaigns were made international, to wit, September 30-October 8, 1933, KINGDOM PROCLAMATION PERIOD; and March 24-April 1, 1934, THANKSGIVING TESTIMONY OF JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES. In the first-mentioned campaign, within 79 different countries on earth Jehovah's witnesses were active, unitedly working together. On the second of these campaigns, March 24-April 1, within 83 countries Jehovah's witnesses were actively and unitedly engaged in the service. In these two international campaigns 18 days were occupied in the field. The following table shows the extent of the activity within those periods.

	Sept. 30-Oct. 8 1933	Mar. 24-Apr. 1 1934	Total for 18 days
Number of countries reporting	79	83	
Pioneers	3,110	3,073	
Auxiliaries	1,274	1,442	
Company workers	30,134	36,522	
Total workers	34,518	41,037	
Testimonies	3,668,766	3,953,214	7,621,980

# RESULTS OF FIVE TESTIMONY PERIODS FOR U.S.A. FISCAL YEAR 1934

	Books	Booklets	Total	Hours	Testimonies	Obtainers	Workers
Sept. 30-Oct. 8, 1933 Kingdom Proclamation Period							
TOTAL	12,583	590,569	612,152	208,513	1,462,274	544,950	16,014
November 18-26, 1933 Jehovah's witnesses Praise Period							
TOTAL	104,553	213,379	317,932	191,361	1,030,970	252,572	16,658
January 20-28, 1934 "Dividing the People" Testimony Period							
TOTAL	19,736	533,903	553,639	197,065	1,368,610	485,144	16,974
Mar. 24-Apr. 1, 1934 Thanksgiving Testimony of Jehovah's witnesses							
TOTAL	15,870	586,952	602,822	221,414	1,592,192	537,096	20,058
June 30-July 8, 1934 "Nations' Hope" Testimony Period							
TOTAL	13,263	564,342	577,605	243,201	1,549,308	501,687	19,706
(5 Periods 1933-1934)							
GRAND TOTAL	166,005	2,498,145	2,664,150	1,061,554	7,003,354	2,321,449	18,062
(5 Periods 1932-1933)							
GRAND TOTAL	181,929	1,890,484	2,072,413	915,550	4,880,667	1,476,100	14,514

<b>Hours</b>	<b>433,399</b>	<b>462,302</b>	<b>895,701</b>
<b>Obtainers</b>	<b>1,380,864</b>	<b>1,393,115</b>	<b>2,773,979</b>
<b>Books</b>	<b>27,465</b>	<b>29,310</b>	<b>56,775</b>
<b>Booklets</b>	<b>1,545,166</b>	<b>1,531,932</b>	<b>3,077,098</b>
<b>Total</b>	<b>1,572,631</b>	<b>1,561,242</b>	<b>3,133,873</b>

This period of united action is exceedingly encouraging to Jehovah's witnesses everywhere. They fully realize the fact that the Lord is at the head of his earthly organization and that all on earth are working under his supervision, and not according to human instruction. In carrying out the work in this way they are obeying organization instructions, which instructions proceed from the Lord himself. Believing this to be true, then they take the instructions from headquarters as being in harmony with the Lord and all work together with one great objective, and that is to give testimony to the people that Jehovah is God, that Christ is King, and that his kingdom will vindicate Jehovah's name and open the way for life and happiness for the human race.

#### **REGIONAL DIRECTORS**

During the year there have been in the field, traveling from place to place, eleven English brethren as regional directors, their work being to meet together with the companies and to give them instruction to aid them to more efficiently carry forward the publication of the message of the Kingdom. The regional service directors are assigned to specific territory throughout the year, the purpose being to enable each company to have at least one visit from a regional service director during the year. In addition to the foregoing there is one brother in the regional service work who devotes himself exclusively to visiting the colored brethren and serving them and aiding them in the organization and in carrying forward the service work.

In addition to the foregoing English-speaking brethren the following field service directors are engaged in

a similar work: Greek, two service directors; Polish, one; Ukrainian, one.

These regional service directors during the year have traveled in the aggregate 209,415 miles. In addition to the foregoing, men are sent out from the Bethel home regularly to companies within a certain radius of Brooklyn to serve them, especially during the united campaigns.

#### COMPANY SERVICE DIRECTORS

Each company nominates one to three persons to be the service director for that company during the year. From these three nominated the Society selects and appoints one to that position. It is the duty of the local service director to organize the company's work and carry it on according to instructions received from the main office in Brooklyn. His authority is limited to this work. He is not the boss of the company, by any means, and he should never deal arrogantly or harshly with any of the company. It is not his prerogative to compel anyone to engage in the service, but by a consistent course of action himself, and by taking the lead, to encourage others to enter the service, showing them that it is man's greatest privilege now to serve Jehovah God and publish the message of his kingdom. Sometimes these service directors get the wrong ideas of their duties, and difficulties arise in the company. If the spirit of the Lord prevails and efforts are put forth to do the work according to the Lord's will, and selfishness entirely avoided, the service director would not be blameworthy. It often occurs also that some in the company desire to have things done in their own way, and this shows that such are not moved by an unselfish spirit of devotion to the Lord. Both the service director and each member of the company should appreciate the fact that they must be united in a common cause on the Lord's side and against the enemy, and that whenever there is difficulty arising between members of the company, such

is an evidence that somebody is not manifesting the right spirit. The church is at unity now, and everyone who is of the Lord will work together harmoniously.

### CONVENTIONS

Another means of publishing the message of God's kingdom and making known the King Eternal and his anointed King is by united efforts put forth at conventions. During the year a number of regional conventions were held, attended by the local and regional service directors and members of the companies, and these unitedly have been a great aid to one another and rendered a splendid testimony of publication to the public.

The outstanding convention in the United States during the year was the one held at Los Angeles, in March, 1934. That convention was attended by between 4,500 and 5,000 brethren, coming from different parts of the country. It was the Memorial season, and those participating in the Memorial appreciated as never before their great privilege. They saw that nine of the plagues upon Egypt had been antitypically fulfilled and now the preparation is in progress for the fulfilment of the tenth plague upon the world, and that in the meantime it is the duty and privilege of all the anointed, not only to participate in the symbols of the Memorial, but to continue to bear testimony to the name of Jehovah God as his witnesses, serving notice upon those who desire to find a place of refuge in God's organization. That convention at California was a great benefit to the Lord's people. A public address was delivered at the Shrine Auditorium on Sunday afternoon, on the subject "World Control", to a visible audience in one hall of approximately 7,000, with two other halls connected by wires, making a total audience that came of about 15,000 persons. In addition thereto that public address was broadcast from coast to coast over a network of 151 radio stations. This included short-wave stations; and their pro-

grams were distinctly heard in the remote parts of the earth, South Africa, England, South America and Australia. Immediately following the broadcast another lecture was delivered, particularly for the benefit of God's consecrated people, the subject being "Requirements", and this was broadcast over a network of 55 radio stations, including short-wave stations for foreign countries.

Another convention, particularly directed from the American headquarters, was one held in Toronto, Canada, on July 6-8. This convention was attended by approximately 5,000 persons and was a season of great refreshing and blessing to those who did attend, and a tremendous witness for the public. More details will appear in the Canadian report. Early in September a convention was held in London, England, attended by approximately 4,500 of the consecrated, and a public meeting with lecture on the subject "Flee Now". The attendance was approximately 15,000. More details concerning this convention appear in the British report. September 7-9 a convention was held at Basel, Switzerland, attended by 2,500 of the consecrated from different parts of Europe. See the Central European office report for more concerning this convention. At all the foregoing conventions the president of the Society was present and addressed the brethren and the public.

#### **ORDAINED REPRESENTATIVES**

The Society sends forth a number of men who are specially authorized to represent the Society both at private and at public gatherings of those who study the Word of God. The divine ordination and commission for these is set forth in the Scriptures at Isaiah 61:1, 2. The Lord Jesus applies the prophecy or commission to himself and to all those who are fully devoted to him and who engage in the service of the Lord in making proclamation of the message of the Kingdom. (Luke 4:18) The men whose names appear below are ap-

pointed by the Society, and authorized and ordained to represent the Society, and sent forth by it to carry on certain parts of its work of publishing the message of the Kingdom, to wit:

#### ORDAINED REPRESENTATIVES

Akash, J. L.	Fekel, C. J.	Lundstrom, D. A. T.
Alita, J.	Franske, F. J.	MacAulay, D. F.
Alspach, B. D.	Franz, F. W.	MacAulay, J. Y.
Alspach, R. W.	Freschel, M.	MacGillivray, A.
Baeuerlein, J. A.	Frost, C. E.	Macmillan, A. H.
Ball, A. L.	Fulgentis, D.	Margyarosi, M.
Ballard, E. E.	Gabler, H. F.	Markus, J. F.
Balzereit, P.	Gangas, G. D.	McClure, M. A.
Banks, T. E.	Geyer, B. P.	McCormick, G. Y.
Barber, C. W.	Glerman, W. J.	McGowan, G.
Barber, R. H.	Gilmer, C. M.	Messner, G.
Bausch, E. W.	Goings, C.	Montero, R.
Bausch, L. R.	Goux, A. R.	Moore, A. E. D.
Baxter, W. H.	Hackenberg, C. F.	Morris, W. O.
Beatty, C. B.	Haigh, J. H.	Morrison, P. G.
Belekon, N.	Hammer, P.	Muniz, J.
Betry, L. T.	Hannan, G. E.	Muzikant, J.
Bodnar, A. S.	Hannan, W. T.	Ness, W.
Bodnar, J. M.	Harbeck, M. C.	Neves, D. D.
Bogard, J.	Harteva, K.	Norder, H. T.
Bradford, H. S.	Hastlett, D.	O'Bleness, L.
Brand, F.	Hatzfeld, R. H.	Ochala, S.
Broad, E. L.	Hegner, G. J.	Oertel, H. C.
Broadwater, L.	Hemery, J.	Oertel, W. R.
Brown, W. R.	Henry, W. F.	Oman, E.
Buenger, P. M. L.	Herr, M. L.	Orrell, E. D.
Burczyk, O. B.	Hersee, W. M.	Palne, R. E.
Burtsch, L. B.	Hibbard, O. J.	Palo, W. J.
Burton, K. L.	Hodgson, D.	Pandolfo, J. A.
Burton, R. G.	Hoffman, A. M.	Pantouris, E.
Casola, P. A.	Homer, D.	Papageorge, D.
Chen, F.	Homlak, R. J.	Paparygopoulos, A.
Coble, W. G.	Hoppe, K.	Park, M. C.
Comuntzis, T. P.	Howlett, M. A.	Peach, A. F.
Copsey, D. W.	Huff, M. D.	Peacock, E. W.
Correnti, J.	Insberg, A.	Perry, J. A.
Cumming, A. E.	Isaac, J. R.	Peterson, W.
Cutforth, C. W.	Jensen, K. M.	Petros, H.
Cutrone, F. R.	Jewulski, T. G.	Phillips, F. E.
Davidson, P. H.	Jones, A. R.	Phillips, G. R.
Davis, R. E.	Jones, C. J.	Photinos, P.
Dawson, J. L.	Jones, G.	Pinnock, H. E.
De Fehr, J. F.	Karanassios, A.	Price, W. F.
Denzler, H.	Kellaris, A. N.	Prosser, C. S.
Derderian, D. P.	Keller, E. F.	Pudliner, M. P.
Dey, Wm.	Klein, T.	Rainbow, J. C.
Di Cecca, G.	Knecht, C.	Rann, G. A.
Dockey, E. L.	Knorr, N. H.	Riemer, H. H.
Draper, G. H.	Koerber, A.	Roberts, C.
Duesler, H. W.	Kuslak, M.	Rogers, A. El.
Dunham, A. F.	Laurix, J.	Rohner, C.
Ebersold, L.	Lester, G.	Russell, G. M.
Edwardes, J. C.	Lindsay, L. M.	Rutherford, J. F.
Elcher, C.	Locke, J. F.	Salter, W. F.
Elrod, W. A.	Lord, R. H.	Santos, J.
Enerothe, T. H.	Lowe, J. E.	Scheider, W.
Eshleman, A. D.	Lundgren, H. B.	Schmidt, V. F.

Schmidt, W.	Talma, G. L.	Werner, A.
Schroeder, B. D.	Telliho, G.	Wiberg, C. E.
Secord, A. H.	Theophilides, A. G.	Wildg, C. de
Severino, F.	Thorn, W. J.	Williams, J. A.
Short, C.	Toutjian, S. H.	Wilson, E. R.
Shuter, S.	Twaroschk, F.	Wise, C. A.
Sincik, L. S.	Ulrich, C.	Woodworth, C. J.
Sincik, V.	Umlauf, J.	Woodworth, W. E.
Sioras, J.	Van Amburgh, W. E.	Worsley, A. A.
Spavich, H.	Van Sipma, S. M.	Worsley, F.
Skaudvila, L.	Volght, W.	Yaholnitsky, S. F.
Skinner, F. E.	Wachsmuth, A. T.	Young, Geo.
Slik, H.	Wagner, A. K.	Zakian, A. S.
Stewart, H. L.	Wagner, C. E.	Zarysky, E.
Stierle, W. R.	Walcekons, J.	Zdunek, F.
Sutler, G.	Wainwright, F. C.	Zell, R. S.
Sullivan, T. J.	Walter, E. M.	Zook, A. B.
Swingle, L. A.	Watt, J. C.	Zopfer, G.
Symondson, E. W.	Weiss, S.	

### OUTSIDE TERRITORY

Territories where the gospel was published outside of the United States but under the direct supervision of the United States are as follows: Alaska, Bahama Islands, Bermuda, Bolivia, British Honduras, Canal Zone, Colombia, Costa Rica, Cuba, Cyprus, Dutch Guiana, Ecuador, Falkland Islands, Puerto Rico, St. Kitts, B.W.I., and Spanish Honduras. The publishers of the gospel in these vicinities report direct to the Brooklyn office, and the distribution of literature is included in the total number set forth under the United States as hereinbefore.

### THE GOLDEN AGE

The publication of *The Golden Age* began in the autumn season of 1919. Since then it has had a healthy steady increase of subscriptions and covers a wide area, reaching many persons in different parts of the earth. It publishes the matter that needs to go to the people but which *The Watchtower* cannot publish because devoted to other parts of the work. The purpose of *The Golden Age* is not to make money; it carries no paid advertisements whatsoever, and receives no revenue. The small subscription price taken by it is turned over to the Watch Tower funds, all of which go to the publication of the Kingdom message; con-

sequently there is no pecuniary profit to anyone in connection with *The Golden Age*.

In addition to the English issue of *The Golden Age* that magazine is published also in Bohemian, Danish, Finnish, French, German, Greek, Japanese, Netherlandish, Norwegian, Polish, Spanish, and Swedish. There are many readers of *The Golden Age* who pronounce it the best magazine that comes to their desk, because it is frank, open and free from extraneous influence, striking always at the truth in an honest endeavor to make known what the people desire to know.

#### THE WATCHTOWER

The official organ of the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society is the magazine *The Watchtower*. It is published every two weeks. It is announced with confidence that the Lord uses the columns of *The Watchtower* to transmit to his consecrated people things that he reveals to them and provides for them to know. It is the privilege of *The Watchtower* to publish explanation of the prophecies, which explanation is based upon the physical facts that exactly fit the prophecy and show that the explanation is correct. There is no attempt on the part of *The Watchtower* to interpret prophecy, for the reason that no human creature can interpret prophecy. Prophecy is of divine origin, and it can be understood only when in course of fulfilment or after having been fulfilled. Long centuries ago God caused holy men to write the prophecies, and now it pleases him to unfold them that his faithful witnesses on earth at the present time may be assured that they are in the right way, and that their hope may be strong.

All of Jehovah's witnesses read *The Watchtower*, and many others, including the Jonadabs, who obtain much consolation and help therefrom. *The Watchtower* carries no advertisements whatsoever, as that word is used commercially. It advertises Jehovah God, his King and kingdom, and this to the honor and glory

of Jehovah. It takes a small amount as a subscription price, all of which goes into the general fund for the promulgation or publication of the truth. At the Brooklyn headquarters *The Watchtower* is published in the following languages: English, Armenian, German, Greek, Hungarian, Italian, Lithuanian, Polish, Russian, Slovak, Spanish, Ukrainian. *The Watchtower* is published in other languages in different countries, as shown in the report herein, including Finnish, Swedish, and Dano-Norwegian.

#### CORRESPONDENCE

The Brooklyn office maintains a correspondence department, and here Bible questions are answered by mail for the aid and comfort of those who desire a more personal explanation. In addition to this, of course, there is a large correspondence in connection with the various matters of the Society's work. During the year letters and cards were received at this office to the number of 301,817, and like mail was dispatched from this office to the number of 377,579. The above figures do not include the correspondence of the president's office, which alone is quite voluminous.

#### THE FIELD

The field activity of Jehovah's witnesses embraces the entire earth. National lines are not fixed by the Lord, but are fixed by organizations of this world. These national lines are recognized in the distribution of the work of advertising the Kingdom because of the different languages and the laws and customs governing the nations which must be observed. Aside from the main office at Brooklyn, the management of which is under the direct supervision of the president, there are 49 branch offices. It is necessary for the president to keep in close communication with all of the managers of these various offices. Each branch office reports regularly to the president's office, giving a comprehensive report of all the work carried on under the

jurisdiction of such office. All these reports must be carefully examined and checked and instruction given from the president's office accordingly. This involves a voluminous correspondence and much work, which is done with real joy. At the conclusion of the fiscal year each branch office reports to the president's office, and the *Year Book* cannot be prepared until all these reports are in. A summary of the reports of these various branch offices is set out in the following pages.

#### AFRICA (East and South)

At Cape Town, South Africa, the Society maintains a branch office, from which the operations of preaching the gospel of the Kingdom are carried on, both in South and in East Africa. Those engaged in the work are chiefly English-speaking people, but there are others, among them Dutch, Portuguese, Germans, and natives, who carry forth the work. The giving of the testimony in far-away Africa during the fiscal year of 1934 has materially increased, and this is gratifying, and praise is given to the Lord therefor. During the year the message of the Kingdom has been distributed in South and East Africa in the following languages: English, Afrikaans, Chinyanja, Xosa, Sesuto, Zulu, Portuguese, Hollandish, German, Greek, French, Gujarati, Yiddish, Urdu, Tamil, Hindi, Chinese, Italian, and Arabic. With the addition of Sesuto and Zulu to the list of languages during the year, it is now possible for practically all the people in South and East Africa, whether they be European or native or oriental, to be informed about and to have an opportunity to respond to the Lord's goodness in providing his kingdom.

Africa is a country great in area and comparatively small in population, but it has pleased the Lord in these last days to carry the message of his kingdom into that country. The work during the year has progressed regardless of opposition by the Catholic hierarchy and others of the clergy. Satan has been unable, by the use of all his instrumentalities, both

visible and invisible, to stop the shining of the light in that land. During the year 1934 there have been placed in the hands of the people in that country bound volumes to the number of 45,467, and booklets to the number of 214,687; or a total of 260,154. This is an increase over the previous year of 63,601 books and booklets.

It will be gratifying to Jehovah's witnesses in other parts of the earth, where conditions are better, to read the following excerpts taken from the report of the Society's local manager of Cape Town:

#### **House-to-House Witness Work**

There has been a healthy increase in this part of the work. The average number of workers in action each week in the Union has gone up from 110 to 136, and there has been a corresponding increase in hours, testimonies and obtainers. The quota of testimonies for the year was 275,000. Actually 340,993 were given. The printed testimonies have done a good work. All workers now understand clearly just what constitutes a "testimony", and the presentation of the card ensures that the purpose of the visit is made known before there is opportunity to shut the door. The fact that we are not "booksellers" is now better understood by the public, and many people of good will gladly embrace the opportunity to contribute to the Society's printing fund to assist with the cost of manufacture and distribution of the literature. There are only some half-a-dozen big towns in this country, and many of the people live in small dorps and on farms. With the help of auto-cars and motor-cars the pioneers and other witnesses are penetrating into every corner, and the message of the Kingdom is being brought to the attention of all. The pioneers and auxiliaries have again set an excellent example and zealously pressed the battle to the gate. The former are very grateful for the provision made to help them meet their expenses in the work. A brief resume of the house-to-house witness work in the Union is given herewith:

#### **House-to-House Witness Report In Union**

<b>Average No.</b>		<b>Weekly Workers</b>	<b>Testi- monies</b>	<b>Ob- tainers</b>	<b>Bound Books</b>	<b>Total Booklets</b>	<b>Total Books</b>
Pioneers	17	20,843	99,641	37,839	22,042	62,510	84,552
Auxiliaries	8	6,728	39,215	13,900	3,566	16,595	20,161
Companies	111	31,898	202,137	68,753	8,781	82,002	90,783
<b>Total</b>	<b>136</b>	<b>59,469</b>	<b>340,993</b>	<b>120,492</b>	<b>34,389</b>	<b>161,107</b>	<b>195,496</b>

## Special Campaign Periods

On account of the fact that a considerable number of witnesses live in comparative isolation with a consequent lack of "territory" around them, it is not possible for such to engage each week in the service, but the special campaign periods furnish an opportunity to all to have a share at regular intervals throughout the year. It is gratifying to report that there has been an excellent response on such occasions, and the figures for each effort reflect an increase over the results for the corresponding periods of the previous year. In the March campaign we had a 100-percent turn-out of witnesses, and with a number of Jonadabs cooperating the number in action was considerably in excess of that of the Memorial participants. The figures for the five campaigns follow:

## Special Campaign Periods—1933-1934. Union

Ob-

	Testi-	tain-	Bound	Book-			
	Workers	Hours	monies	ers	Books	lets	Total
<b>Kingdom Proclamations Period.</b>							

Sept. 30-Oct 8, 1933	250	4,077	27,608	12,961	846	16,370	17,216
<b>Jehovah's witnesses Praise Period Nov. 18-26, 1933</b>	163	2,297	11,998	3,432	1,237	4,927	6,164
"Dividing the People" Testimony: Jan 27-Feb 4, 1934	168	2,777	13,276	4,035	2,199	5,490	7,689
Thanksgiving Testimony of Jehovah's witnesses. Mar. 24-Apr 1, 1934	318	5,498	46,746	20,154	563	22,815	23,878
"The Nations' Hope" Testimony Period June 30-July 8, 1934	270	3,783	33,791	16,071	696	18,885	19,581
<b>Total</b>	1,169	18,432	133,419	56,653	5,541	68,487	74,028
<b>Five Periods (1932-1933)</b>	857	15,123	84,240	30,872	8,498	41,150	49,648
<b>Increase</b>	312	3,309	49,179	25,981		27,337	24,380
<b>Average per Period this year</b>	233	3,686	26,683	11,330	1,108	13,699	14,805

## Transcription Machines

A year ago the work with the machines was just beginning and the opening shots were being fired. The number of machines has grown from six to eighteen. These are scattered throughout the country, and in proportion to the effort put forth by those who have them the Lord is blessing this part

of the work with results. During the year 862 meetings have been held, and 1,281 complete lectures given. The total attendance was 31,548, giving an average of 36 persons per meeting, and the number of books and booklets placed at such meetings was 5,075. The pioneers have done much of their work in the "market place" and "in front of the post office" or other convenient spots. Little advertising has been necessary. The playing of a musical record calling attention to banners on a car announcing the meetings has been sufficient to draw the crowd. In the towns more effort is required, but by putting on well advertised lectures at regular intervals the companies have had some good meetings and the follow-up lectures have resulted in a number of studies' being formed in different districts of Cape Town and other towns. Arrangements are in hand for a number of the talks to be recorded in Afrikaans, and this will considerably increase the effectiveness of the witness in the country districts. The message is getting around to such an extent nowadays that persons who have heard the talks in one town will sometimes introduce themselves at another meeting in a place perhaps a thousand miles away with the remarks, "I heard one of your machines in action at \_\_\_\_\_. This is surely a splendid method of advertising the message you have for the people." To advertise the meetings in the towns and elsewhere upward of 200,000 leaflets were distributed, while posters, window cards and news ads also helped the good work along. We now look forward to handling the new phonograph and 4½-minute talks, for this will still further increase the Kingdom witness.

#### Service Assemblies

During the year we arranged service assemblies at Durban, Cape Town, and Germiston. Transcription machines were used to good advantage, not only to convey the Kingdom message to the public, but as a vehicle to carry the Lord's message and your own personal words of comfort and encouragement to the anointed in such talks as "His Organization" and "Requirements". The assembled brethren were greatly enthused as our obligations and privileges as members of Zion were so pointedly brought to our attention, and it was with joy we went forth to give the witness from house to house. Special efforts were made at the divisional campaign week-ends, even though on account of the great distances brethren had to work mainly in their own groups or even in isolation. We were conscious, however, that we were sharing in the world-wide effort being made at such times.

#### New Publications

The booklets *Escape to the Kingdom*, *Dividing the People*, and *World Recovery*, containing the message in such clear and

concise form, were widely distributed. We have had many inquiries at the office for the Society's free booklet in which all the publications are described. Many books have been placed as a direct result of the interest aroused by these booklets. *Preparation* has had a greater distribution in the eight months we have handled it than any other bound volume yet published by the Society in a similar period of time. Quite a number of the publications have been translated into Afrikaans and also into the principal languages of Bantu origin, such as Xosa, Sesuto, Zulu, and Chinyanja. During the year 35,000 books and booklets in the various Bantu vernaculars were distributed.

#### Nyasaland

During the course of the year the Society established a depot at Zomba, and a European brother was sent from the Union in April to organize the work in that part of Central Africa. This has resulted in a considerable impetus being given to the work in that land, and it gives pleasure to report that the brethren have been greatly encouraged and are working together harmoniously. During the year there has been a weekly average of 28 company workers. They have spent 19,936 hours in field service, given 123,175 testimonies, and placed 4,592 pieces of literature. In addition to the above, two pioneers from the Union, after completing the work in Portuguese East Africa, gave the testimony in November to the small European population at Zomba, Blantyre, Limbe, etc., and placed 700 books and booklets.

#### The Rhodesias

Unlike Nyasaland, in which country responsible government officials have been just and given us opportunity to organize and control the work of witness, the governments of Northern and Southern Rhodesia persist in their attitude of refusing to permit European witnesses from the Union to enter these parts of South Central Africa to organize the work effectively. Brethren resident in these countries have suffered much persecution. Although the law of Rhodesia guarantees religious liberty to all sections of the population, our native brethren are continually harassed by the C.I.D. and their literature is frequently confiscated. A number of them have been imprisoned and otherwise abused and ill-treated. Much of this persecution is instigated by the missionaries, who are thus putting on their 'garments' and clearly indicating whom they serve. In spite of the opposition and persecution, Jehovah's witnesses in these countries go bravely on. The Lord has richly blessed them in the work of testimony, and, when brought before the rulers and magistrates, they are able by the Lord's grace to give a good reason for the hope that is within them. In making their defense they quote freely from the Scriptures

and submit relevant passages from the publications, such as pages 31-33 of *The Crisis*. If any set of rulers more than another will not be able to say "We didn't ken", then surely it will be the rulers in that part of the British Empire. While it is impossible to get complete and accurate reports from all centers, such records as we have received indicate that there has been a weekly average of 37 workers. These have spent 15,099 hours in the witness work and given 67,752 testimonies. There have been 9,865 obtainers of literature, who have received 11,759 pieces. The Kingdom message of hope and deliverance has brought joy and gladness to many in those lands.

#### East Africa and the Isles of the Sea

The work previously accomplished in East Africa and the islands of the sea continues to bear fruit. Recently we received a letter from a gentleman managing a gold mine in Tanganyika. Although he lives 120 miles from the nearest post office, two or three booklets have found their way into his possession. After reading them he immediately got into touch with the Cape Town office by air mail, requesting a catalogue of all Judge Rutherford's books and, apparently realizing that he had discovered another kind of gold mine that was worth exploring, he requested that we reply by air mail. In due course we received his order for a complete set of books and booklets. There is now a little company on the island of St. Helena, and one of the new phonographs will shortly be brought into action there. On the island of Mauritius there is also a little company who have taken a definite stand on the side of Jehovah and who are doing what they can to further the Kingdom interests.

#### "The Watchtower" and "The Golden Age"

There has been a gratifying increase on both files.

#### Office

More work in the field means increased work at the office. It is a great privilege accompanied by unspeakable joy to be kept busy in the Lord's service. Our day's work begins at 8:00 a.m. and frequently ends at 10:00 p.m. Close to 6,000 letters were received, and a similar number dispatched. In addition, 6,000 circular letters and 4,000 *Bulletins* were sent out. Our little hand-feed Platten machine turned out 218,350 window cards, office stationery, etc. Saturday afternoon, Sunday morning, public holidays and additional days in the campaign periods are devoted to field service. At other times, on Sundays and on certain evenings during the week, when not in the office, we are busy at transcription and study meetings. There are not many hours in the week that we can call our "own" and when we do get an hour at the close of the day there is always

the latest *Watchtower* or *Golden Age* to occupy our time, and they give us renewed strength and courage for the next day. In common with our brethren at headquarters we realize that there is a war on and accordingly there is no time for "visiting". We regard it as a responsibility unto the Lord to conserve our strength for the work. Although conscious of our limitations, we are doing our utmost to faithfully carry out instructions from headquarters and to encourage our brethren in this land to do likewise. The house-to-house witness report covering the activities of the three brethren in the office during the past year is as follows:

Workers	Hours	Testimonies	Obtainers	Books	Booklets	Total
3	853½	7,069	3,634	744	4,004	4,748
Weekly average per worker						
5½	45	23	5	25	30	

The total distribution is in excess of last year's figure by 1,000 pieces.

In closing this report it gives real pleasure to report that the brethren in this land are working together in unity. The clearer light on the new covenant has brought great joy and an increased appreciation of the responsibility resting upon those who have been selected as "a people for his name". As the great battle draws near, our one desire is to remain faithful and maintain our integrity that we may have the great privilege of being associated with our beloved King in the vindication of Jehovah's name.

#### AFRICA (West)

West Africa is a very large area of territory. The Society's office at Nigeria exercises supervision over Nigeria and the Gold Coast. While this country is under the control of the British Empire the greater amount of witness work is amongst the natives. There has been a healthy increase of the work during the year over and above that which was done previously. This has been greatly aided by the use of the transcription machines, six of which machines are in operation in that country now. The opposition to the truth has increased in West Africa. Necessarily, this is to be expected, because the Devil uses his instruments everywhere to oppose the message of God's kingdom. Regardless of all this opposition the work goes forward

to the praise of Jehovah and his King. From the local representative's report the following is extracted:

The ranks of the unemployed are increasing daily, and the world's outlook is discouraging to them; because of that many are giving heed to our publications, that the only hope for the world is in the kingdom of Jehovah.

Satan the Devil tried to disorganize the faithful workers in Nigeria, and succeeded in a measure with a few of them, by using one, Ukoli by name, to interfere with the Lord's work. Some of the Jonadabs took sides with him, but after awhile, because of his egotistical manner, many sincere ones withdrew from him, after learning that organization instructions are not discretionary, but mandatory. We thank you for your letter of August 6, and what we quoted from it to the workers of lawlessness made a clean separation, and also stirred up the ire of the lawless ones, as you will see in the newspaper clipping sent. In all of it the work continues to grow. Many are calling for water immersion, and entering into the service work, in fulfilment of Revelation 22: 17.

The transcription machines are doing valuable service among the English-speaking people. How glad we were for the six machines sent in April this year. They increased the placing of the literature, especially that of booklets. The transcription lectures assist some in dividing of the people. The records "Flee Now" and "World Control" are doing some work, along with the booklet *Righteous Ruler*. You will be glad to know, dear brother, that the faithful workers on the west coast of Africa, especially in Freetown, Sierra Leone, Gold Coast, and Nigeria, have exceeded last year's output by 29,509 books and booklets.

During the year 79 public lectures were held in English and Yoruba, with a total attendance of 10,520. Transcription lectures, 152, with a total attendance of 3,450. Company meetings, 310, with an attendance of 3,450. Letters received, 402; dispatched, 412. Number of books sent out, 17,525, and booklets, 76,839; a total of 94,364 books and booklets. In addition, over 50,000 handbills were distributed for advertising public lectures.

#### ARGENTINA

In the priest-ridden country of Argentina, where there is much opposition from that source, the witness work concerning Jehovah's kingdom continues to increase. Of course, the opposition cannot prevent its increase, but the opposition is mentioned here merely to show that Jehovah's witnesses there as well as in other parts of the earth must battle against difficulties.

The territory of Argentina, Chile, Uruguay, and Paraguay is under the jurisdiction of the Society's office at Buenos Aires. The number of workers is small, but their zeal is in keeping with the house of the Lord. The distribution of books and booklets in this territory during the fiscal year is as follows:

	Books	Booklets	Total
Argentina	4,290	63,688	67,978
Chile	2,367	12,860	15,227
Uruguay	160	7,300	7,460
Paraguay	100	2,244	2,344

The total number of booklets and books distributed by the workers under the jurisdiction of the Buenos Aires office during the year was 93,009. In addition to this there were placed in the hands of the people 329 Bibles, 7,785 *Golden Ages* for which contributions were received, and 33,303 distributed free; and, in addition thereto, 70,795 tracts.

Other means of proclaiming the truth in that country has been by radio. During the year 174 programs have been broadcast by means of electrical transcription. This has increased the interest of the people, and more people are rejoicing in the truth than before.

In Paraguay the work has only recently begun, and there is a small number working. The manager of Argentina reports that people in Paraguay are very humble and easily approached. Even those in higher ranks are not proud and haughty as they are in other places. It seems that this field is opening for a wider witness for the truth. In Paraguay the Hierarchy, as Satan's instrument, carries on the persecution against the little company of workers there. Two pioneers were arrested and taken into court. They were searched and their literature was taken away from them. Upon the hearing of the case they were given their freedom and told to go ahead and keep on preaching. Following their same tactics as in other parts of the earth, these agents of Satan cause some of the pioneers to

be arrested as hawkers and peddlers. The chief of police, hearing the testimony of these pioneers, took out of his own pocket five pesos and handed it over to those claiming taxes, and sent the pioneers away and told them to go ahead and preach the gospel, that they should not be interfered with again.

Among the pioneers working there, are two sisters who recently went from Mexico, and also some Polish, Italian, German, and Spanish and native witnesses, who are working together. Amidst difficulties and with much joy the brethren in that part of the field continue to press forward in publishing the message of God's kingdom.

#### AUSTRALIA

The branch office at Strathfield, Australia, has immediate jurisdiction over the vast area of Australia, New Zealand, the South Sea islands, including Java, and Sumatra. It must be borne in mind that great difficulties are encountered in bearing witness in some parts of this territory, particularly in heated zones of the East India islands. Jehovah's witnesses in this part of the earth are not great in number, but they are strong in the Lord and the power of his might. Their zeal for the Kingdom has been made manifest during the year. Of course, there have been some hangers-on who have not been satisfied with things done according to organization orders. There are always some selfish ones who get in the way, but the real ones who are devoted to the Lord and his cause have not been retarded in their efforts because of such hangers-on. The results during the year are exceedingly gratifying, and the report of the local manager is submitted herewith, from which the following excerpts are taken, and quoted with much pleasure:

At the beginning of the year 1933-34, when the Australasian Branch quota of one million pieces of literature and two and a half million testimonies was set, we scarcely dared hope that this objective could be reached. The report shows that Jehovah has abundantly blessed the efforts of his witnesses in this ter-

rity, and to him is due all the praise. Thanks be to his holy name for the privilege of sharing in this work.

Although there has been no open attack upon the work in this land, yet there is abundant evidence that the clergy and their allies are becoming very angry and are opposing the work in every possible way in an endeavor to prevent the people from hearing the message of the Kingdom.

#### Distribution of Literature

The various tables showing the distribution of literature during the year are attached hereto. Bound books to the total of 142,477 were placed; an increase of 9,956 over the previous year. Nearly one-third of the bound books placed consisted of the book *Preparation*, or a total of 42,954. During "Dividing the People" Testimony Period, in January 1934, 11,820 of these books were placed in nine days. The total literature placed during 1933-34 was 1,005,868 pieces, there being an increase of 36.6 percent over the previous year's total. A comparison of the work done during the past four years reveals the fact that the number of pieces of literature placed during 1933-34 is nearly three times the number placed during the year 1930-31.

The five special testimony periods held during the year were occasions of rejoicing and enthusiastic service, and the results were surely blessed of the Lord. The figures disclose that nearly one-third of the year's total placements were made during these five special periods.

#### Pioneers

Although there has been a decrease in the actual number of pioneers reporting during the year, this branch of the service is now better organized and we have every reason to believe that the ranks of the pioneers will increase in the months that are ahead. There has been much to hinder in the shape of abnormal weather conditions, yet in the face of these difficulties faithful witnesses cover the vast distances of this remote and far-flung territory. During the year, one party almost completely encircled Australia, traveling over 7,000 miles in witnessing to the peoples of the sparsely populated northwestern and northern areas. The trip occupied five months, 1,246 testimonies were given, and 3,544 pieces of literature were placed. Of the total literature placed by this branch during the year, the pioneers accounted for 56.6 percent.

In the auxiliary service there has been an increase in the number of workers. The auxiliaries placed 10.7 percent of the year's total amount of literature.

The increase in the numbers of the company workers and sharpshooters is gratifying. To their ranks must be added the increasing numbers of Jonadabs now engaged in telling forth

the Kingdom message. Company workers and sharpshooters placed 32.7 percent of the year's total.

In connection with the regional service directors' visits to the various companies, long distances have been traveled, the total muleage covered during the year being 54,331. Four brethren have been periodically engaged in this work.

#### Radio

As in the United States of America, so in Australia, the Roman Catholic hierarchy has been working overtime to end the broadcasting of the Kingdom message. In spite of the Devil's subtle activities through his earthly representatives, the clergy, there are still twenty-five stations in five out of the six states of the Commonwealth broadcasting the Kingdom message each week. The minister in charge of radio in Australia tries to justify the objections of the clergy on plea that the lectures are controversial. To this a high official in a radio corporation, who is friendly to the truth, replied that if his organization refused to broadcast all matter that is controversial, nothing would be broadcast at all. Every item at present on the radio programs is objected to by someone. Recently, George Bernard Shaw, upon being refused the New Zealand radio facilities on the score that his speeches were controversial, humorously remarked that scrutiny of the radio program revealed that the only non-controversial items were the time signals and weather reports. Radio broadcasting of the truth has ceased in Java for the time being, owing to the opposition of the Catholic hierarchy.

The special broadcasts comprising the series which include the lectures "Intolerance" and "World Recovery" were broadcast by twenty stations. Twenty-three stations participated in the broadcast of the lecture "World Control". It is expected that the lecture "Flee Now" will be broadcast during the Kingdom Praise Period. As a countermove against the Devil's efforts to stop the broadcasting of the Kingdom message in Australia, Jehovah's witnesses are now busily engaged in obtaining signatures to a petition to the Federal Parliament. This petition is along similar lines to the one circulated in America last year.

#### Electrical Transcription

Results from this branch of the work are gratifying, particularly the outdoor work. Due to the difficulty in obtaining some of the necessary parts in Australia, the number of machines in operation has not increased as rapidly as expected. It is not practicable to import the machines, owing to the high duty which must be paid. These duties more than double the original cost of the machines. We are glad to state that the machines we have in use have been built by consecrated breth-

men. Much experimenting has been necessary, and some of the parts supplied by local manufacturers have been found to be unsuitable and have had to be replaced. Otherwise, the machines which have been constructed by our brethren are giving very good results, and, now that the initial difficulties have been overcome, we expect many more machines to be brought into use.

The result of the year's transcription work is as follows:

Number of machines in use	50
Number of meetings held	1,567
Total attendance	65,642
Books placed	466
Booklets placed	4,017
<i>Golden Age</i> and <i>Watchtower</i> placed	742
Average attendance per meeting	42

#### Island Service

The work in the Islands is carried on under great difficulties. The European population is small and usually proud and haughty. The huge native populations are mostly illiterate and very poor. However, a good witness has been given, and we hope for a substantial increase during the coming year, when it is expected that two boats will be brought into use. This will make possible the giving of the witness in hitherto inaccessible islands. During the cyclone season, which lasts about six months of the year, many of the islands are entirely isolated. Even when steamers are running it sometimes takes a week to reach an island only fifty miles distant from the starting point. This is due to the circuitous route taken by the steamer in visiting other islands. If ordinary transport lines are used in working these islands, it might mean a stay of six or seven weeks in one place which contains territory sufficient only for two or three days. By the use of boats it is hoped that these difficulties will be overcome.

Various attempts have been made to gain an entrance into the French colonies of Tahiti and Indo-China for the purpose of giving the witness there, but up to the present our efforts have not been successful. This we know is due to the influence of the Roman Catholic hierarchy. Further attempts will be made, which we hope will enable us to carry the Kingdom message to the French colonies.

Reviewing the year's work, while all the praise is due to Jehovah for the results achieved, we desire to express our appreciation of the manner in which the campaigns have been directed from head office. We are grateful for the steady flow of new publications which has been provided by the Lord. On each occasion when a new booklet has been announced for a special testimony period, we have always received our sup-

plies in time to place the booklets in the hands of the workers for the campaign. This is surely a wonderful example of the manner in which the Lord's organization is functioning, from the head downwards.

During the year *Watchtower* subscriptions and also the subscriptions for *The Golden Age* have increased in that land. The local branch has issued *Bulletins* to the number of 15,400, received letters to the number of 12,288, dispatched letters to the number of 6,859, free circulars to the number of 28,695. The messages by electrical transcription, broadcasting the lectures of the president of the Society, have numbered 1,449; the broadcasts of the Kingdom message, to the number of 1,175. Radio stations broadcasting the truth during the year in this section number 30. There has been a wide publication of the truth. The small number of persons engaged in the work have given testimonies to the number of 2,542,111. The publication of the truth in Australia has been far greater during the fiscal year just ending than at any previous time. Thus it is seen that as depression in commercial matters increases, the opportunity for giving testimony to the truth and comforting the people increases. All praise is due to the Lord. To him thanks is given.

#### AUSTRIA

Publishing the truth in Austria continues under great adversity. Wherever Satan's black agency operates, darkness reigns and gross darkness covers the people. The light that breaks through into the minds of some cheers them and gives them greater opportunity to prove their integrity to Jehovah God. Some may often wonder why God permits the Catholic hierarchy to fraudulently use his name and mislead the people and blind them to the truth. The answer is found in Exodus 9:16 (*Leeser*): "But for this cause have I allowed thee to remain, in order to show thee my power; and in order that they may proclaim my name throughout all the earth." Now a few have the chance to maintain their integrity while giving the

testimony, and God's power will be exercised in the complete destruction of all workers of iniquity. The faithful witnesses of Jehovah in Austria delight to continue their efforts to publish the truth. During the year they have placed in the hands of the people books and booklets to the number of 266,854; *Golden Ages* to the number of 99,896; Bibles, 802; which somewhat exceeds the work done in the previous year. Considering the many obstacles in the way and the difficulties encountered, there is every reason to greatly rejoice for this continued publication of the truth.

No district service meetings took place, because of the rather strained political conditions. The authorities even forbade in different cases the Watch Tower studies, even though these meetings were held in private homes. They claimed that the public tranquillity and security was in danger, though there was not one single proof that we had ever disturbed anybody. Another time it was claimed that the Catholic inhabitants found fault with such meetings. Of course, we entered protest against this, but, though some of the cases are about half a year back, nothing has been done.

The authorities confiscated also two booklets; one of these two because of the notice of a priest, as later came to light in court. 12,000 booklets were taken by the police from the office.

Often the brethren are stopped in their work from house to house, but they do not let themselves be discouraged. Many brethren were sentenced, but they paid no fines; they went to prison, where they had opportunities to witness.

One brother had a little chapel in the front of his house, as often seen in Tyrol. After he heard about the Truth he put the statue of Mary and the cross away, had the chapel whitewashed, and gave a painter the order to paint Scripture texts in the walls of the chapel. After half a year some policemen came, took the broken statue of Mary and the cross, which had been lying under a bench along, and told the brother that he would be arrested on the charge of religious disturbance. A few days later he and his son were arrested by several "Heimwehr" people (a political organization which the government uses) at 5 o'clock in the morning. He was declared guilty of high treason, but because the district attorney withdrew his accusation he was released after twenty days' arrest.

Another friend sent us a letter from a mayor in Tyrol, telling him that, though he was a good worker, he would be discharged because he had left the Catholic church.

Even though the Constitution stands for liberty of faith and conscience, and the chancellor emphasized this fact in different speeches, we have great difficulties when we act according to our faith; which is further proof of Gog's conspiracy.

In spite of all these difficulties the brethren continue their work with joy. Also a few Jonadabs have joined up with us. We work with the witness cards, by which the work is more simplified and unified. The brethren do not preach so much any more. We dare not go out with the large bags, because the different official agents get suspicious at once. We have many opportunities of making use of the scripture: "Be wise as serpents!"

Concerning the future we pray to Jehovah that he may keep the door of opportunity open, that we may be active as long as possible to the honor of his name.

These few items are further evidence of the duplicity and crafty conduct of the Roman Catholic hierarchy, posing before the world as the representatives of God and of Christ but continuing their efforts to keep the people in total ignorance of the truth. The Lord will duly recompense them in his own good way and time.

#### BELGIUM

The country of Belgium contains many good people who are held in subjection and are prisoners within the meaning of the Scriptures. The Roman hierarchy dark bird watches with lustful eyes over the Belgians and attempts there, as elsewhere in Europe, to interfere with the people's hearing the message of God's kingdom. Acting at the instance of the Hierarchy, those who are non-citizens of Belgium and who are engaging in the pioneer service have been expelled, thus reducing the number of servants in that country. In spite of all this, the remaining ones during the year have distributed books and booklets to the number of 128,632. Only 105 persons in Belgium partook of the Memorial, and, out of these, 90 are company workers, and 70 out of the 90 have participated in the service. During the year the company workers have done more than in times past. In the town of Brussels every one of the company has participated in the field service. The local manager says:

As there are but few brethren, the dear pioneers have done most of the work. The majority of these pioneers are foreigners. Learning this and seeing their diligence, the authorities refused to grant the pioneers permission to stay in the country. That is the reason why the number of pioneers has decreased to such an extent, and therefore not so many pieces of literature were distributed as last year. During the past year there were at times 26 pioneers in the service, and this year, in the first half, there were 11, and now there are just 6 left; two of these are Belgians. Four auxiliaries, also Belgians, have now joined them in the work.

In addition to the books and booklets placed in the hands of the people, copies of *The Golden Age* have been placed to the number of 25,803. Bibles have been placed in the hands of those who had none previously to the number of 301. Continuing, the following is from the local manager's report:

The Thanksgiving Witness Period was our best. The special witness periods are always a cause for extraordinary efforts, but during this period, a letter from Brother Rutherford inviting everybody to participate, more than ever was done. With the booklet *Dividing the People* we have had pleasant and also laughable experiences. There are many people in Belgium who can neither read nor write. After one farmer had read the witness card with much difficulty, telling about the he-goats and sheep, he said: "Go to my neighbor, he has a he-goat." Another said: "My sheep aren't sick"; and still another said: "Nothing doing, we haven't got any sheep."

Poverty is always increasing. It is to be seen that many people fear that a war might break out, or a revolution, or some other catastrophe. Jesus' words are being fulfilled: "Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming."

Our main concern is that the authorities do not allow the foreign brethren to distribute the literature. Under the threat of expulsion from the country they have to sign a paper that they accept the order not to distribute these books. Yet the brethren have confidence in the Lord and say that they will obey Jehovah more than men. The authorities have examined the books and declared that they will not allow foreigners to distribute such literature. We are told that Belgians should do this, but we are sure that they would also forbid Belgians if the law would not forbid such a course of action. Hereby they have identified themselves. We wrote to King Leopold III that he should have this matter investigated, that we may be treated justly. We sent him the books in French, for which he thanked us, but was sorry to say that he could not do any-

thing for us. We applied to the premier, but received no answer. Just lately we appealed to the minister of justice, who has control over the foreigners, but again the answer was negative. We pray that Jehovah may soon give his enemies their just punishment.

The Belgian friends joined in the protest of Toronto, London, and Basel against the persecutions of Christians in Germany. Numbers of copies of *The Golden Age* containing the report of these persecutions were distributed amongst the people. Two brethren occupied in this work were attacked by twelve young men, who seized their bags with the *G.A.* copies and insulted the brethren. This attack was so rough and nasty that even the police investigated the matter and tried to find the evildoers, so as to bring them before court. A Catholic paper congratulated the plucky fellows, and, because Jehovah's witnesses came so often into the village, the paper wrote a nasty article full of lies about the work and also about Judge Rutherford, but the press-law forced them to retract this article in their own publication. While they gritted their teeth, we rejoiced that the paper itself must give its readers a witness.

Belgium is a Catholic country. There are very few Protestants. But the Protestant preachers are also our enemies, as can be seen from the following: They dictate to their people what they are to read and what not. The Watch Tower publications are, of course, among the latter. These men are blind shepherds.

During the year we were able to give a radio lecture every Wednesday. The station can be heard only within a radius of 50 miles. Once the proprietor received complaints that he poisoned the people's minds through the Watch Tower lectures. He answered through the microphone: "It is better to be poisoned by the truth of the Watch Tower than by the poison gas in the next war."

Hopefully we look towards the future. We expect that soon three transcription machines will be in use in this country. We pray to the Lord daily that he may guide us in the work of honoring his name. The Belgian friends are also very thankful for the spiritual food which they receive through *The Watchtower*. These truths, which are studied regularly in the meetings, give to all much joy and courage to carry on the work of vindicating Jehovah's name under all conditions.

#### BLIND

The use of the word "blind" here means those who have no natural eyesight. Amongst such there are some who are anxious to know more about the Lord's

kingdom. The Society prints in the Braille language for the blind certain literature. During the year there have been 78 of these who have begun reading that which is furnished. In the Chicago library we have in service 104 volumes prepared for the blind. Almost all of these are in the hands of readers. They are read and then returned to the library. During the past year the Branch for the Blind has loaned 482 copies of *The Watchtower* to 26 readers, 21 of whom are still reading. There has been furnished to branches outside of the United States, for the benefit of the blind, literature to Australia, South Africa, British, and Canadian branches. The pioneers and company workers everywhere should take notice of the fact that the Society maintains a branch at Logansport, Indiana, for the blind. The address is 1210 Spear Street, and the pioneers and other workers coming in contact with blind persons who desire to know the message of the truth should communicate with the office at the above address.

#### BRAZIL

For many centuries the Catholic hierarchy has had a free hand in Brazil and has succeeded well in causing the people to be in ignorance of God's kingdom. The Lord's due time has come, however, to have the gospel of his kingdom preached for a witness in that land as well as in other parts of the earth, and during the year this has been done. While the witnesses are few in number, yet the method of preaching the gospel, by word of mouth and by the printed message, has been carried on. Also, the Kingdom message was broadcast by radio. The publication of the gospel of the Kingdom was carried on in Brazil during the year to the extent of placing in the hands of the people 2,342 books and 19,078 booklets, or a total of 21,420. More literature is being prepared and printed for the publication of the gospel in that land, and the work continues, by the Lord's grace.

**BRITAIN**

The Society's branch office at London, England, has immediate jurisdiction over England, Scotland, Ireland, Wales, and the Channel islands. That territory has long been religion-ridden, that is to say, dominated by the clergy, Catholic and Protestant, who have influenced politics and commerce and made common cause with the same. Jehovah has found his witnesses in that territory, however, and for several years there has been an earnest, zealous, active publishing of the truth. Those who have been called out of darkness into the marvelous light and have been anointed as Jehovah's witnesses have come from the various divisions of the Catholic and Protestant religious organizations, and many outside of all such. When one is given the garments of salvation and the robe of righteousness by Jehovah he is no longer affiliated with any earthly organization, but is marked and identified as a child of God and a servant of the King and Kingdom.

The work in Britain this year has made splendid progress. In the face of increased unemployment and greater depression advertisement of God's kingdom has increased within this territory and the publication of the message has likewise increased. During the year bound books and paper-covered booklets containing the message to the honor of Jehovah's name and for his kingdom have been placed in the hands of the people to the total number of 2,931,794. This is an increase of more than 300,000 over the previous year.

It seems proper to here mention in connection with this increased witness work that the testimony card has been used to splendid advantage. Time has been saved, much talking saved, and more people interested, who have availed themselves of the opportunity of getting the Kingdom message in form that they can study in their homes.

A personal visit of the president to London during the year, and coming in contact with thousands of the

brethren in different parts of the country, affords the proof that the brethren within this territory are in better spiritual condition than they have ever been heretofore. They have a keener appreciation of their privilege of serving Jehovah, and united in his holy cause they go forward with zeal peculiar to his house. The local manager has made a comprehensive report. The following quotation is taken therefrom:

It is a great joy to us to send you an account of the year's work in the British field and by it to report an increase in the result of the labor of love done by the faithful in the service of Jehovah and for the honor of his name. It has been a year of happy service to all; and unquestionably the willing service done for Jehovah has brought his rich blessings upon the brethren. As is to be expected, those who in this way seek the glory of Jehovah and the fulfilling of his will are realizing a closer unity of faith and service than ever before. The brethren in this part of the field are seeing themselves more clearly than ever as separated unto him their God; and in this they are realizing their oneness with their brethren through all the earth. The gathering opposition of Satan's forces as reported in *The Golden Age* undoubtedly has helped to that realization; but the bond of the love of God under the leadership of the glorious Lord is the unifying power. The Lord's visible house in Brooklyn, the center of his work upon earth, is that which effectively draws us all to him and to his work. It is this realization of unity and purpose which has been the effective cause of the good report which we here send, showing the work accomplished in doing the will of Jehovah, for the vindication of his name.

In figures, the branch report of the year's work is an output of 2,931,794 books and booklets, and in placing these the number of testimonies given to the honor of Jehovah and concerning his King and kingdom is 7,392,456. These figures are an increase on those of last year by 261,909 volumes and 497,712 testimonies. The average number of brethren regularly out on service monthly has increased from 4,217 to 4,318.

In this part of the great field, which in the hand of the Lord is under your supervision, we are for the most part in the favorable position of having little manifestation of opposition from those who yet have power in this evil organization. The exception is in the Irish Free State, and in such parts of Ireland as are under the control of the R. C. priests. There our brethren have been put to loss, and some bodily hurt, and the literature which would help the people has been destroyed. For this freedom in other parts of the country we are thankful, and the brethren are being urged on by what

has happened in the United States, and Germany, and other parts, to do all they can while the going is good. Hence it is confidently expected that the new fiscal year upon which we now enter will see a further increase in the hours worked, in testimonies given, and in literature placed. There are signs also that the Jonadab class are going to take an active share in the work and so place and prove themselves. Undoubtedly there are very many persons in this country who will declare for Jehovah before the end comes, and evidently these will come forth from their prison only after hearing afresh the truth which gives liberty to the captives. Detailed accounts of the figures stated above are attached, and are summarized as follows:

#### Pioneers

Owing to the limited area in Britain and under the present conditions territory cannot be found for more than about 210 active pioneers and 110 auxiliaries. As that number were engaged last year and fully active, it follows that there is not much difference to report in the number of hours worked; but, owing to the fact that more work has been done with booklets, and the use of the testimony card, there is a very considerable increase in the witness given. Last year the pioneers gave 1,580,207 testimonies while placing 514,863 volumes; this year they have given 1,749,660 testimonies and have placed 704,474 volumes. The auxiliaries have not done quite so well, for whereas last year their number of testimonies was 592,645 with 137,357 pieces of literature left, this year their figures are, testimonies 571,861, though they have increased their placements to 187,358. There is a slight falling off in the hours of work both by the auxiliaries and by the pioneers.

#### Transcription

There are 371 units in the British field, and already 173 of these have 227 transcription machines in use. During the year in this service there have been held 13,169 meetings, with a reported attendance of 400,547, and 38,949 pieces of literature have been placed at the meetings. Of the new phonographs there are 24 already in use with the brethren, and there are 3,550 discs in the companies. This new phase of the witness is proving a great stimulus to the brethren, for one person by machine can give a testimony to many in the same time as to one person given in the old way, and with the certainty that the word heard is an exact expression of the truth to be declared. The brethren are seeing the unquestionable advantage of the record both in increased power and the certainty of the message, and we confidently expect to be able to report a great increase of the testimony to the vindication of Jehovah's name, and a general advantage to the witness of the Kingdom while

the time for service lasts. The shipment of 900 records which was received at the time of the convention was disposed of in three days, and 1,000 more were ordered. Also 200 phonograph machines are on order. The two motor house-cars we have in service have placed 14,210 pieces of literature, and they report having noted 16,227 listeners. Their mileage on the service is noted as 6,493 miles. The third house-car which you instructed us to start will soon be ready and will be used in Scotland.

The aerial mast which you sent us from Canada and instructed us to put into use is expected soon to be in operation, and we confidently expect to report good results from this exceedingly effective manner of witness.

#### Service

Of the 371 service units under the direction of the London office there are 346 which have reported monthly of the work done. The holders of certificates on our records number 5,175, and of these 4,007 have regularly taken part in the service. This number of active workers is an increase on the last report of 10 percent, though the hours worked are rather less, at 474,979, to compare with 486,608. Quicker work has been done, however. The testimony card is undoubtedly the cause of this; 5,070,935 testimonies have been given, to compare with 4,793,892 last year. The total of placements of the service work is shown as 1,509,566, to compare with 966,163 last year. The special testimony periods are entered into with zeal, and that persistent intention to do the work which the Lord has shown to be the will of Jehovah.

Of the special booklets received, *Righteous Ruler*, *World Recovery*, *Intolerance*, *Dividing the People*, there were placed 1,738,869. The last bound book, *Preparation*, has been well received: 66,305 volumes have been sent out. In the work the average of testimonies per obtainer has been reduced from 4.9 to 3.3, which again shows the effectiveness of the testimony card both as a time-saver and as a direct help.

Twenty-five service assemblies have been held during the year, attended by 8,882 brethren in the work, and at these 213,909 testimonies were given. These meetings have been a stimulus to the brethren and have undoubtedly done their part in giving the encouragement the Lord purposed when he directed the brethren to meet together. There was no unusual feature at these meetings, except at one held at Wednesbury. There the local council had been influenced by the clergy to cancel an arrangement which gave our brethren liberty to use a park for a transcription service. This opposition gave us an opportunity of telling the people of Wednesbury something about these self-appointed "spiritual leaders". They got to know

something about themselves which they had not realized, and others also learned this. Following your direction a petition which was placed before the people of the town resulted in 4,323 persons' signing the petition, saying, amongst other things, they did not want these clergy to do their thinking for them. This number of signatures was obtained by the local brethren within a period of seven days.

The London convention, when you were with us, has been the outstanding feature of the year's work. It was a great time of encouragement and of united service; undoubtedly every one of the Lord's people here was stimulated for further and better service. The thrilling talk on Daniel's experience, and the great public meeting on the Sunday night, will never be forgotten. In some respects, perhaps in all, that public meeting can be said to be the best we have had in London. The message "Flee Now" came as a personal message to those who were present in their thousands, and it was that also to others who were not actually present at the meeting, for we had reports of your voice's being heard distinctly even two miles away. The loud-speakers were very effective both in the large auditorium and evidently in carrying your voice so far afield. The convention was an event never to be forgotten.

The Bethel family continues to enjoy its special privileges of service: the office staff, the packing and printing departments, and the home force are all doing their best to have the Bethel machine do its work as a satisfactory part of the whole. The office has received during the year 50,902 pieces of mail and has dispatched 55,770 pieces. These figures are considerably in excess of last year's and represent a corresponding increase in outside activity. The packing department has sent out 27,011 packages, large and small. Our two printing machines and printers record 3,786,706 items off the press. The privilege of serving together is enjoyed by all and we are all glad to serve as directed. The family enjoys its privilege of field service, and the transcription machine we have has added much zest to the work, besides that it quite evidently makes it at once easier and more productive. The family has a piece of music and a record of one of your short speeches each day as we eat our midday meal. At the morning meal we have, as always, consideration of the morning text, and at evening always some portion from the current *Watchtower*: the Monday evening weekly study of *The Watchtower* gives us one of the happiest and one of the most profitable hours of the week. All the members of the family are, of course, certificate holders, and all take a part in the work. The record of hours in the service during the year is 4,056, with testimonies 39,616, at the rate of 9.8 per hour, with placements of 4.1 per hour and 2.9 testimonies per obtainer. The output of the family service is 17,182, an increase of 3,148 on last year's figure.

The new enlarged general office, which is being made according to the instruction you gave, is now almost ready, and certainly it will make for better service.

The *Watchtower* list keeps about the usual level: the number of renewals is slightly less, but the number of new yearly subscribers is increased. The food the Lord supplies by *The Watchtower* is strong for those who are weak, who require only milk, or are unable to make use of the meat Jehovah is providing for his mature people. But it is noticeable that those who now come into the way of the Lord find it exactly suited to them, and even the Jonadabs get their rich portion by its means. Surely it may be said that the constant flow of living water of truth through *The Watchtower* is one of the Lord's special signs that he is with his people, guiding them into his way and leading them into his will. By every evidence *The Watchtower* stands alone; and the brethren realize that it is exactly fitted to them, and they know that it is Jehovah's messenger to them.

The *Golden Age* circulation here is exactly at the same level as last year. We could wish that its circulation were increased among the brethren. Probably they have not noticed that of late it has been carrying much more from your pen than was the case. This shall be emphasized, and we shall be glad to report progress.

The general condition of the country's affairs is slightly more favorable than at this time last year: trade figures have increased a little, but there are no signs of any upward movement nor evidence of better times to come. However, the fact that things are not so bad as they were is something to take note of and also to take advantage of, and that is being done.

Your recent visit to London and the joyful gathering of the British brethren to meet you in convention would show you that your visits are looked for with much expectation. While you are away their prayers ascend to Jehovah that his blessings may be upon you for his name's sake.

In order that the reader may have a brief summary of the work carried on within Great Britain during the fiscal year the following is set forth:

#### SUMMARY REPORT FOR YEAR ENDING SEPT. 30, 1934

##### Pioneers:

Highest number:	Pioneers	213
	Auxiliaries	120
Average monthly:	Pioneers	203
	Auxiliaries	108
Total hours:	Pioneers	235,557
	Auxiliaries	64,443

Testimonies: Pioneers	1,749,660
Auxiliaries	571,861
Grand total hours	300,000
Grand total testimonies	2,321,521
Grand total obtainers	724,837
Grand total literature placed	892,460

**Companies:**

Number of service units	236
Number of certificate holders	4,792
Average workers monthly	3,734
Proportion to certificate holders	77.8%
Total hours	441,707
Total testimonies	4,756,122
Total obtainers	1,376,151
Total literature	1,521,075

**Sharpshooters:**

Number of sharpshooter units	135
Number of certificate holders	383
Average workers monthly	273
Proportion to certificate holders	71.3%
Total hours	33,272
Total testimonies	314,813
Total obtainers	133,415
Total literature	268,086

**Service Assemblies:**

Number held	25
Attendance on drives	8,822
Hours on drives	19,447
Testimonies on drives	213,909
Obtainers	35,550
Literature placed	36,328

**Transcription:**

Number of machines	227
Companies operating machines	173
Meetings held	13,169
Attendance	400,547
Literature placed	38,949
Number of phonographs	24
Number of discs with companies	3,550
Number of phonograph discs sold	900
Number of motor house-cars	2
Literature placed: Books	3,099
Booklets	11,064
Bibles	47
Total	14,210
Miles traveled	6,493

**Miscellaneous:**

Parcels packed and dispatched	27,011
Circular letters	9,697
Sheets printed on Gestetner	10,992
Letters printed on Miehle	29,800
Service Bulletins	90,250
Transcription lecture slips	2,130,600
Total items printed	3,793,806

**Literature Output:**

English edition: Bound books	220,882
Booklets	2,710,515
Total	2,931,397
Foreign editions: Bound books	74
Booklets	323
Total	397
Total output of all literature	2,932,191

**Correspondence:**

Letters received	50,902
Letters dispatched	55,770
Letters re-directed to workers	7,555

**BRITISH GUIANA**

The work in British Guiana has not made much progress during the year. The publication of the message has been as follows: Booklets, 6,673; books, 1,266. This work has been done by 22 company workers. There is only one organized company in British Guiana. From the local manager's report the following quotation is taken:

In spite of heavy rains in December last, followed by the unusual floods of January (involving much loss of livestock and farm produce in the rural districts), and the increase in depression which was a natural consequence, we have been able to keep the message of the Kingdom steadily before the people.

Twenty-two public meetings were held, the total attendance being 3,430, and we hope to develop this feature in the future, particularly with the transcription machine and the new 12-inch records.

Although there is a slight decrease in the total number of our company workers, there was a corresponding increase in the weekly average in the field.

Class attendants, though small in number, are regular, and the company in general is in good condition.

**BULGARIA**

It has been exceedingly difficult to get the message of the Kingdom published in Bulgaria. By the brother recently sent there to work the following report is made:

Till now not much could be done in this country in spreading the message of the Kingdom. But in this fiscal year, with the approval of the president, for the first time efforts were made to spread there the message amongst the people. Some pioneers were sent to Sofia, the capital of the country, and they worked there some time with good success. As soon the enemy see that, he tried everything to hinder the preaching of the gospel. The country is very strong under the influence of the Greek-Catholic clergy, and the ecclesiastical council resolved to take action against Jehovah's witnesses, and the hypocritical indictment was taken up, Jehovah's witnesses had any connection with communism. The clergy had the success that the brethren must leave the land. The government's officers themselves showed good will and proved that they only by the influence of the clergy have driven out the brethren.

The report for this year reads:

Testimonies	23,089
Hours worked	1,264
Booklets distributed	7,934
Books distributed	8
Obtainers	6,671

The low number of books is explained by the fact that we have no books in Bulgarian language, but that are distributed only a few foreign books, especially Armenian. There are also some interested friends, but they have no proper understanding of the service. Notwithstanding we hope to the Lord that he has also in this country some witnesses who will give the witness before the final end.

**CANADA**

The Society's branch office at Toronto, Canada, gives attention to the publication of the Kingdom message throughout all the provinces of that land, also Newfoundland. Compared to the vast area of territory the population is small, which necessitates the traveling long distances by the witnesses in order to reach the people and deliver the message. During the year Jehovah's witnesses have shown their zeal and faithfulness in meeting all manner of obstacles and

progressing with the publication work. In the service performed these faithful witnesses of the Lord have employed books, booklets, magazines, radio, transcription machines and phonographs, and this necessitated the use of automobiles, motorcycles, bicycles and boats, and many traveling afoot.

This division of Jehovah's army working in the field during the year averaged 1,960 persons per month, which is a decided increase over the number engaging in the work in the previous year. The largest number working in any one month was 2,573. These put in in the field an aggregate of 483,323 hours, giving testimony to 2,688,073 persons, and placed the Kingdom message in 763,430 homes; and the total number of books and booklets placed during the year has been, to wit, 1,537,572. It is observed, therefore, in comparing this with last year's report that there has been a healthy and decided increase in the work and the results of the workers.

#### **Testimony Periods**

Jehovah's witnesses publishing the truth throughout this area of the field have shown their faithfulness and devotion to God's kingdom both by their zeal and by the results of their efforts. This is especially made manifest in the five testimony periods. The zealous ones throughout the provinces responded to each one of these periods, as many as 2,573 persons engaging at times in this work.

It will strengthen the faith of God's people in all parts of the earth reading this report to know that the opposition in Canada and Newfoundland has been sharp and ever on the increase during the year and that this opposition has come from the clergy, and that the faithful have progressed in the face of this opposition. This is conclusive evidence that Satan uses religion as his chief means of opposing God; thus Satan demonstrates not only himself to be a liar and a hypocrite but that his agents are likewise hypocritical

liars. The Catholic hierarchy is strong in the eastern part of Canada and, fearful of losing its hold upon the oppressed people, from which it derives its revenue, its cardinals, bishops and other subordinates, including the Jesuits, continue to oppress anyone who carries to the people the message of good cheer. Jehovah's witnesses have no fight with individuals, of course, and their only purpose in going into Canada or anywhere else is to bear the message of God's life-giving and life-sustaining truth to the people as Jehovah has commanded them to do. The "goats" continue to manifest their viciousness, and their end is near at hand and is definitely stated by the Scriptures. It is impossible in the brief space allotted to this report to give all the details of the persecution in Canada and elsewhere, and hence we must be content to look at a few of them, which are merely samples of the wickedness practiced by Satan's crowd upon God's faithful witnesses in the earth. From the local manager's report the following is extracted:

The year opened up with The Kingdom Proclamation Period, during which the *Way of Escape* booklet was distributed, and this campaign met with marked success, as the figures hereinafter given reveal. Within this period, and as authorized by you, there was the added blessing of an intensified drive on the city of Quebec, the Catholic stronghold of this continent. For many years now, as you are aware, there has been a persistent and intense bombardment of the province of Quebec by Jehovah's witnesses, resulting in case upon case being fought in the courts and many of his servants' being cast into jail. As a testimony of the hatred of the Catholic hierarchy toward Jehovah's witnesses it might be well to summarize briefly the outstanding features of the Quebec city onslaught mentioned above.

Quebec is a city of some 130,000 population and is practically solidly Catholic, 95 percent of the people being French-speaking. The nearest place thereto at which Jehovah's witnesses reside is Montreal, 175 miles away, and there there are but few. In order, then, to gather together a troop large enough to attack the city brethren had to be assembled from the Toronto district, 600 miles distant. In due time a convention was arranged for at Montreal, and there the volunteers for this particular campaign assembled. They were given explicit and

full instructions as to the method of carrying on the work, and on the closing day of the convention 40 cars, bearing 158 workers and fully armed with ammunition for the attack, left for the city of Quebec. Each car had its particular territory assignment, and each worker his individual assignment. The booklets to be distributed were printed in French and consisted of *Escape to the Kingdom, Heaven and Purgatory*, and *Religious Intolerance - Why*. These were wrapped in packets of three, the wrapper bearing the message suggested by you, namely: "READ NOW! THIS IMPORTANT MESSAGE FOR YOU FROM the Royal Priests (1 Peter 2:9)." Sharp at 6:30 o'clock the next morning every worker went into action, and within an hour and a half 45,000 booklets were spread throughout the city. Just a few days prior thereto we learned that the archbishop of Quebec had called a plenary meeting of the Canadian episcopacy to take place in the "dear" city of Quebec on the day following our attack. Such an important conference is held only once in five years, and great preparation is made for it, and special masses held. As a consequence there were priests there from all parts of the eastern States and from all provinces of Canada, as well as thousands of laymen, and when our workers commenced the onslaught the streets were filled with the "faithful" on their way to early morning mass.

Within half an hour after the publication work began messengers rushed to the priests and the police were hurrying over the city to make arrests. Out of the 158 workers of Jehovah's witnesses the police succeeded in rounding up and imprisoning 30. Jehovah's witnesses calmly went about their work and did it faithfully and were not frightened by the appearance of officers. So great was the excitement in the town of Quebec that it well appeared that a foreign foe was trying to sack the city. The fact is that God's message of truth frightens the Catholic hierarchy much more than an invading army of guns, tanks and air bombers.

It was not until some hours after the friends were taken into the police headquarters that an official charge was laid against them. After much deliberation it was finally trumped up and they were charged with "... being a party of a seditious conspiracy", and a date was set for the preliminary hearing. When the brethren appeared at that time they had changed their attire as much as possible, the sisters particularly wearing different hats, and as a result the policemen were much confused and could identify only six of the 30 arrested. These were sent up for trial, and it is expected their case will be heard during the early part of November of this year. All who had a part in this service, and particularly those who are held for trial, are greatly rejoicing in the privilege and blessing which is theirs of suffering in the interests of the Kingdom.

Since this campaign the anger of Satan and his hosts has increased and is everywhere manifest through his agents. They have with much bitterness fought Jehovah's witnesses at every opportunity, with the result that we have had no less than 59 brethren involved in cases in that province during the past year, being charged with many crimes, "publishing blasphemous libel," "having a part in a seditious conspiracy," "disturbing the peace," "violating the Lord's Day Act." But, despite all this opposition, by Jehovah's grace the greatest witness ever given in that province has taken place.

Some of the earnest workers in the field make reports as follows:

During the past season the priests have repeatedly advocated unlawful measures to interfere with our work, many times engaging carloads of men to follow us, to spy on us, interfere with our witnessing, arouse the people to mob violence, and on other occasions have caused the arrest of those who are keeping the commandments of God. Without a single exception the trouble can be traced to the religious leaders, of whom Jesus said, "Ye are of your father the devil." We have great difficulty in getting camping accommodations, as the people are afraid to have us, even those who are favorable. One has little idea the hold the priests have upon them and how fearful the people are of the power of the priests, who will resort to the basest of means to accomplish their purpose. Many times the brethren have been ordered from their camping site after having settled for the night. On one occasion one of the tents was the target for several hundred stones, two of the brethren being in the tent at the time.

Today we stopped for lunch about two miles from a town, when three big cars drove up and there poured forth from them about twenty men, including the mayor and priest of the town. From all sides came threats of burning. I got out my camera while they were talking French to the men. The priest called for them to take it away from me and the mayor tried to, but I held on. It was really too dull to take a picture, but it made the priest skip to cover and the men felt rather mean. In the territory we are now working the people have been well warned. They know what we have immediately and are of the spirit that is only too glad to join in chasing us out. No one will even give us vegetables in exchange, and we are forced to camp in the woods for protection at night. One man said we were worse than the Devil, that we were polluting the whole country. We were pleased to hear that. One thing is sure: no matter how dark the prospect seems, the Lord always provides a camping place for us and something to eat.

At St. Joseph de Beauce two of our brethren were arrested and charged with "selling without a license". We had fought other cases at this particular point, and in each instance the

judgments given were most unjust and unreasonable. Again on this occasion a good witness was given in the courts and ample evidence presented to show that the accused were innocent, but, as before, the judge ignored all testimony and fined the brethren \$100 and costs or 30 days in jail. In view of our former experiences it was useless to fight the case further; so the brethren chose the jail sentence. It seems very evident that the Devil's crowd are after the money of Jehovah's witnesses. If the friends would refrain from paying fines and go to jail the opposers would soon find themselves outwitted. More and more this policy is being adopted by the workers in this land. . . .

The number of pioneers in the field averaged 179 monthly, showing a slight increase over last year, while the largest number engaging in the service during any one month was 222. These, with characteristic zeal, have carried on the battle with unabating courage and joy. In the summer months their witness has been given in the small towns and rural territory, while during the winter their activities were concentrated in the larger centers. The three most important of these were the pioneer camps in Montreal, Toronto and Vancouver, where the brethren assembled in groups of 28, 66 and 19, respectively. In these cities houses were rented and furnished largely with articles loaned by the company members, and each camp was thoroughly organized. Particularly interesting was the witness given in Toronto and Vancouver. In both of these cities there are a large number of company workers who have always, with abounding zeal, borne testimony to the Kingdom, covering their territory over and over again with splendid results. Despite this intense witness, however, the pioneers swept the cities and obtained excellent results. With the economic administration of the camps, the cooperation of the local friends and the general results obtained in the field, all were able to care for their expenses.

During the summer the pioneers have reached into almost every nook and corner of this far-flung land, and particularly interesting have been the reports from the brethren working by car far up in the northern interior of British Columbia, and from those covering the 7,000 miles of the western coast line by means of a motor boat. Some indication of the joyful time they have been having in this outlying territory is given in the following reports:

From the British Columbia boat: "Many logging camps which employ hundreds of men in the summer season are situated on islands and inlets, and our efforts at these points have been confined mainly to placing the literature. It is difficult to hold transcription meetings, due to the fact that the men can be reached only between supper time and bed time and it means many idle hours for us during the day and fast

work in the evenings to call on them before bed time. This also applies to the transient fishing camps which move along the coast from place to place following the flow of fish. Hundreds of small fishing boats accompany them. The fishermen are on the fishing grounds all day and can be reached only after their return in the evening. Despite this, however, we have had many opportunities of giving the witness by means of the transcription lectures. Many of the logging camps are built on large floats and lie right on the river, and so we have found that the most effective way is to broadcast the lectures right from our boat. Thus the message goes out clearly over the little settlement and all are able to hear. There are, of course, a large number of isolated settlers also here and there along the coast. In all classes we find numbers who have taken a definite stand for the Kingdom and who want to be fully in line with its principles. They seem to be in a waiting attitude as to what to do and readily take the literature to obtain that information. The Lord's protection over us has been marked on many occasions when we have had to buffet the storms and rough weather, and we indeed greatly appreciate the privilege of bearing testimony to his name and kingdom."

From the pioneers in the northern interior: "This is a territory where civilization has left few tracks and much of the wild west still exists. Cowboys parade about in full regalia of chaps, spurs, and ten-gallon hats, busting bronchos and roping steers. Large reserves of Indians are located here and there. Because of the scarcity of people we make bold to hold up everybody that comes along the road and invariably leave with them some books. Oftentimes the roads are long and difficult to travel, but in almost every case we find someone waiting for the message. Upon one occasion we stopped to meditate the advisability of continuing, but decided to go on. Hours later we came upon a ranch and found everyone away but three cowboys and one Indian. They showed real interest and clubbed together and obtained six bound books and all the booklets. The next morning an Indian rider overtook us on horseback with the statement, 'You got good books! More better I take some more before you go.' The Anglican Sunday school van came up, but turned back when they crossed our tracks, as we leave too many flies in their ointment. At F— we found the Indian whose letter appeared in the July 18 *Golden Age*. He was highly elated when we came, and vehemently exclaimed, 'We are brothers!' On the whole the Indians listen very attentively and all who can obtain literature. In the absence of money, leather goods are offered, buck-skin coats, gloves, moccasins. We have had them sit about our campfire until after midnight listening to an explanation of the truth, asking questions. Their eyes would glisten with suppressed excitement as we told them of the Kingdom. We have

not found much opposition except in some cases when the dominies told us, 'This is our job'; to which we agreed, but advised them to get out of the sinking ship before it is too late.'

Like other parts of the field, the publishers in this territory are made up of pioneers, auxiliaries, sharpshooters and company workers. All of these have shown a harmonious unity in going forward in their work during the year. The net result of their efforts is stated above in total amount of literature placed in the hands of the people during the year.

As is well known by all *Watchtower* readers the radio commission of Canada, acting at the instance of the Hierarchy and other religionists, have put forth their strongest efforts to keep the people in ignorance of the truth, but still there are people who hear the truth by radio and other means. From the local manager's reports a further quotation is made:

#### Radio

The outstanding features in the witness by radio were the chain broadcasts "The True God", "The Mimic God," "Why Serve Jehovah," and "World Control", particularly the latter, which was broadcast from Los Angeles. These were well received throughout Canada from the American stations. Of special mention, too, was your public lecture "Flee Now" delivered in the Maple Leaf Gardens in Toronto and in turn relayed to the American stations. According to reports it was well received throughout Ontario and the Maritime Provinces, despite the strenuous effort of the enemy to prevent it. The reception in Toronto through the Buffalo station was exceptionally clear.

While, as you are aware, the ban against your lectures by electrical transcription is still in force in Canada, nevertheless they are being delivered by local brethren over the following stations: CFCN, Calgary, Alta.; CKMC, Cobalt, Ont.; CKOC, Hamilton, Ont.; CJCB, Sydney, N.S. With these four stations broadcasting the truth weekly and the large number of American stations that are heard in this land the witness by radio has been little curbed by the arbitrary and unjust action of the Radio Commission.

#### Transcription Machine Work

This new outlet for the proclamation of the Kingdom message has been laid hold upon with much enthusiasm by the

friends everywhere, and today there are 126 transcription machines in operation, in addition to a large number of phonographs. The number of meetings that have been held by this means during the year totaled 5,450. At these there was a total attendance of 142,949, an average of 26.2 per meeting. The number of 12-inch lecture records in the hands of the brethren and Jonadabs is 1,112. There has been a ready response to this added feature, and it is very manifest that these records will be used extensively in the witness work from this time forward.

To the end that the transcription service might be more effective and far-reaching, we have, in harmony with your authorization, manufactured a number of powerful amplifiers and horns, and some aeromasts by which the horns are raised 55 feet 6 inches in the air. A few of these are already in operation, and it is encouraging indeed to hear of the splendid testimony being given. While the interesting experiences are so numerous space would not permit to deal with them all here, I might mention one or two of special interest, namely:

"There were assembled in a Baptist conference on the shores of Lake Ontario near Hamilton some 3,000 delegates, with all their 'higher lights' present. The brethren had arranged for a transcription witness in that vicinity, about a mile and a quarter away, by means of the aeromast and were quite unaware that the conference was in session. Shortly after the broadcast commenced a number of men came rushing up demanding that the lecture be stopped. When asked why, they replied that they were holding a conference and your voice was coming into their tent with such volume that their own speakers could not be heard. Needless to say their demand was not heeded, and they went away in great anger saying they would call the police. The program of one hour was completed, however, and no further interference was experienced. So the delegates at the conference had the joy of hearing your entire lecture 'Flee Now'."

One of the regional service directors who is using the powerful amplifiers with his electrical transcription machine writes as follows:

"I am highly pleased with the Outdoor Public Address System, and the results I am getting are beyond my greatest expectations. It is a wonderful weapon to use against the Devil's crowd. At Smith's Falls about 500 heard the lecture. It could be heard plainly six blocks away. The next morning it was the talk of the town and the local friends were much enthused. At Kingston many people had gathered to hear a band concert, which was not to start until 8:45 p.m. We arrived early and broadcast the lecture to those assembled, about 400. We asked no one's permission to use the park and experienced no interference. Last night, at Fordwich the lec-

ture could be heard distinctly all over the village and even in the church. A large number of people came up to the machine and listened with interest, and the brethren rejoiced greatly to see such an effective means of witnessing in operation. I had similar experiences at Owen Sound, Tara, Bognor, Meaford, and Trenton, where the audiences numbered 520, 120, 104, 160, and 206, respectively."

#### Conventions

During the past year 184 conventions were held, as a result of which 324,574 testimonies were delivered and 84,625 books and booklets were placed. Outstanding amongst these and in a class by itself was the large convention in Toronto, at which you were present. Some 4,000 friends assembled from throughout Canada and the United States, and Newfoundland, too, was represented. The large public meeting which you addressed in the Maple Leaf Gardens, the biggest and most modern auditorium in this country, having a seating capacity of 16,000, was the greatest public meeting ever held in this land. The place was practically filled when you began your lecture, after which none were admitted to the auditorium and as a consequence thousands were turned away. The echo and reecho of that mighty bombardment is still being heard in this land. Beyond question Jehovah used the occasion and blessed your effort to the honor and glory of his name and to the comfort and strengthening of his people.

These conventions have been used of the Lord, not alone as a means of bearing witness, but also for uniting his people and strengthening them in the great battle of faith against Satan and his forces, and invariably thereafter the brethren go forth more determined than ever to press the battle to the gate and do with their might what their hands find to do.

One very interesting feature in this service has been the large number of Jonadabs that are now attending the conventions. This army of those who 'hear, and say, Come', is increasing rapidly month by month. During a few small conventions in the prairie provinces over one hundred were immersed, thus symbolizing their consecration to do God's will. The sincerity of their step is evidenced by their works.

#### Foreign Work

All told, the friends in this country are of eleven nationalities and their service is one of spreading the truth amongst the people of 46 different languages. The work of those of foreign nationality has gone steadily on during the year; and while nothing of any outstanding interest has occurred, a substantial witness has been delivered. The number of these brethren taking part in the work averaged 142 monthly. They gave 168,104

testimonies, spent 30,764 hours in the field, and placed 56,638 books and booklets in the hands of 36,822 obtainers.

#### General

While the rulers in this land are striving desperately to stay the oncoming storm, conditions are going from bad to worse, and the masses, restless under the heavy burdens placed upon them, are manifesting discontent and discouragement in many ways. Though upon the surface things appear to be running smoothly, it is well known that conditions are far from what is desired and that almost anything might break forth at any time. As one goes from place to place and witnesses the distress of the people and the incompetency of Satan's regime it becomes more manifest that the only hope for the world is God's kingdom, and for that the remnant sincerely pray.

As the battle waxes more furious and Satan with his ever-increasing anger throws his forces against Jehovah's witnesses, manifestly they, to stand, must have a full assurance of faith; and the Lord, true to his promise that, "as thy days, so shall thy strength be," has graciously provided for them. He has provided them with an abundance of food convenient, giving them the assurance that they are on the right side and doing that which is pleasing unto him. The book *Preparation* and the *Watchtower* articles have unquestionably been the instruments used by the Lord in this regard during the past year and have made it possible for his faithful ones to have a keener appreciation than ever before of the precious promises set forth in his Word. As a consequence their appreciation and gratitude is reflected in a more intense zeal in telling forth his praises. While realizing the fact that the remnant are certain to suffer persecution and contradiction of sinners in this time of battle and war, they, with a full assurance of faith in God's promises, are with boldness and courage pressing the battle to the gate, at all times doing with their might what their hands find to do to the honor and praise of Jehovah's great name.

#### CENTRAL EUROPEAN OFFICE

The Central European office, situated at Berne, Switzerland, exercises immediate jurisdiction over the territory as follows: Austria, Belgium, Danzig, France, Italy, Luxemburg, Poland, Rumania, Saar Basin, Switzerland, The Netherlands, and Yugoslavia. The amount of literature distributed in these countries is set out in their respective places, and the figures mentioned in the report from the Central European office will not be taken into consideration in the review of the

work at that office. In the Central European headquarters books and booklets are manufactured, *The Golden Age* and *The Watchtower* are printed in several different languages, and the literature is printed for other countries not named above. The Central European office during the year has also acted in a special capacity in behalf of the Society's affairs in Germany; hence a portion of the report from that office embraces Germany. Excerpts from the local manager's report are set out as follows:

It is true that the pioneer work has suffered a great deal in our territory, because, not only German pioneers, but also English and Swiss pioneers, were expelled from various countries. We had to keep moving them about from one country to another. In spite of this handicap, the work has increased; for the companies and the pioneers who were able to continue have greatly increased the number of hours in the service and thus the balance was made up and surpassed. More pieces of literature were put out than ever before, and this is cause for rejoicing.

#### Service Work

**IN GENERAL:** In the Central European territory there are 450 organized companies, with 6,500 regular members, whereof 5,571 participated in the service during Thanksgiving Week. This number includes 447 Jonadabs, who reported their service. The Memorial report shows, however, 9,370 participating. 206 pioneers worked under this office, but this number decreased to 150 towards the latter part of the year. From 50 to 70 auxiliary pioneers also were engaged in the service.

**COMPANY WORK:** When during the year the number of pioneers decreased greatly, we addressed the companies and urged them to spend more hours in the service. In the November *Bulletin* of 1933 we proposed how it would be possible to increase the quota of hours by 60,000, and the brethren appreciated the admonition. We were glad to see that the quota not only was reached, but was surpassed by 30,000 hours. The increase, therefore, was 90,269 hours. This fact alone declares what a wonderful harmony and determined cooperation exists between the members of the remnant. This remarkable increase of hours spent in the service meant a real effort on the part of the brethren. Surely a remnant will remain faithful to the Lord. It may be remarked here that in the countries of Belgium, France, Alsace, Saar Basin, Switzerland, Austria and Poland a concerted action to distribute *The Golden Age* increased the subscription list. This action meant 24,296 hours

in the service, the distribution of 222,027 *Golden Age* copies, and 3,353 new *Golden Age* subscriptions.

The distribution of literature has not increased in the same ratio as the increase of hours might warrant. It was reported that economic conditions in every country are getting worse and that the people are becoming more fearful. For this reason the placement of bound books has decreased to the extent of 9,320 volumes. On the other hand, the output of booklets shows an increase of 164,483 copies, and the distribution of *The Golden Age* an increase of 212,152 copies. Thus far in our territory 7,390 new subscriptions for *The Golden Age* were obtained during the year.

**PIONEER WORK:** The pioneer service is directed from the Berne office. This branch of service, as stated, was greatly hindered during the year. All German pioneers working in France, Belgium and Austria were sent out of the country, and some were even sent out of Holland. Thus we lost some of our best pioneers. We then hoped to replace them by pioneers from England and Switzerland. The ranks were thus closed again, but soon the Devil caused new attacks upon these.

The circular letter issued from the office of the French Ministry of the Interior instructed all police stations throughout France to expel all foreign coworkers of the Tour de Garde. For details see report of France. We believe that this particular attack against the foreign pioneers in France points to the Devil's conspiracy, in which the "evil servant" plays a part.

Yugoslavia shows an increase of 1,349 books and 46,508 booklets. To compare with 8 pioneers during the last year, there are now 26 pioneers in Yugoslavia. Even though the government does not grant a permanent residence to these pioneers, they come from Hungary when they are expelled there. Some of the pioneers are being chased from one country to another, and yet they continue and often return to the country from which they were expelled, working as long as possible. They endure much hardship, and yet they rejoice and continue faithful, fearing neither men nor devils.

The pioneer work in Rumania shows that 14,000 more booklets than last year were distributed by them.

The pioneers in Holland also are having good success. They increased their hours by 11,661. The distribution of literature has decreased a little, for the Hollandish are very conservative and unemployment is also increasing in Holland. However, the work with *The Golden Age* was successful, the pioneers distributing 50,487 copies of the Hollandish *Golden Age*.

Summarizing the pioneer service work, we may say that each one has done his best to keep up to the prescribed quota of 110 hours per month. Many work regularly 130, 150 or 180 hours a month, and several very strong brethren average from

250 to 350 hours per month. This was the case with pioneers in Yugoslavia and Holland. We are certain that those who manifest their appreciation for the service also experience the Lord's special care and blessing.

**JONADABS:** The Lord's word regarding the Jonadab class is being fulfilled. Many honest and upright persons are now manifesting themselves and are participating as Jonadabs in the witness work. Thus, during Thanksgiving Period, 447 Jonadabs reported having had a part in the service.

**JEHOVAH'S YOUTH:** A number of young people throughout Central Europe have recently organized themselves. They have also taken their stand on Jehovah's side, and recently they adopted a

#### RESOLUTION

as follows:

"We, 'Jehovah's Youth,' acknowledge Jehovah as the Giver of every good and perfect gift. We believe in the Bible as His Word of Truth, which He has given for the instruction of man in the way of righteousness. As friends of the truth we wish to support the work of God on earth by participating in the witness work for his name under the leadership of the Society, that is, the witnesses of Jehovah, in order that we might have the protection of Jehovah and of his anointed King, Christ Jesus, and in God's due time share in the blessings of the Kingdom.

"Therefore, we would ask the president of the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society, Judge J. F. Rutherford, to accept our love for God's people and for God's truth and to give us, as friends, an opportunity of collaborating in the work of Jehovah's witnesses."

This Resolution was addressed to the president of the Society, who responded as follows:

**MY DEAR FRIENDS,**

The Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society delights to welcome you into the chariot of the Lord, which means to have you travel along with us as Jehovah's witnesses and participate in giving the testimony to the honor of his name. The Lord Jesus, Head of God's holy organization, says: "Let him that heareth say, Come." (Revelation 22: 17) Those of good will and who are called "Jonadabs" are the ones who hear and who are to say to others: 'Come and believe that Jehovah is God, that Christ is King and that the Kingdom is the hope of the human race.' I am glad with you and for you that you have taken your stand to be devoted to Him and his King. You are therefore of those of whom Jesus says: 'I have other sheep; them also I must bring.' You are of the Lord's sheep, meaning that you are obedient to his kingdom. The Society welcomes you as

associates in preaching the good news of the Kingdom. Continue faithfully to do so. Study the Lord's Word and thus learn the meaning thereof, and learn obedience. And thus you have the promise that you may be taken through the trouble and share in the everlasting blessings of Jehovah through his King. Be assured of my best wishes.

(Signed) J. F. RUTHERFORD, President,  
Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society.

**STATISTICS:** In order to have a proper comparison we leave out Danzig and Luxembourg, which were added to our territory during the year, and give herewith a general statistic regarding the countries of Austria, Belgium, France (including Alsace-Lorraine), Holland, Italy, Poland, Rumania, Saar Basin, Switzerland, and Yugoslavia:

Total of company workers	Hours	Books	Booklets	G.A. copies
387,259	48,883	1,019,727	612,634	
Total of pioneers	273,919	67,637	737,056	174,639
<b>TOTAL</b>	<b>661,178</b>	<b>116,520</b>	<b>1,756,783</b>	<b>787,473</b>

Here we see that the increased hours of the company workers have made up for the decrease of hours by the pioneers and that the actual amount of literature distributed increased above last year, regardless of the retrogression of the pioneer work.

During the five special service periods the following result was obtained in the Central European territory:

Hours	202,543	G.A. copies	131,683
Books	26,442	Testimonies	1,978,936
Booklets	648,813	Obtainers	638,462

On February 9, 1934, the Society's president addressed a letter to the German Government demanding that the persecution of Jehovah's witnesses cease, admonishing that if it did not within a certain date, the facts would be published to the world. Facts had been gathered in Germany relative to the unjust treatment of Jehovah's witnesses, and, the German Government having ignored the request, these facts were published in *The Golden Age* and distributed in large quantities in Germany, Switzerland, Austria, Saar Basin, Alsace, The Netherlands, Belgium, France, and Poland. Quoting from the report of the Central European office:

At regular intervals certain quantities were shipped from different points to addresses in Germany, and most of them were delivered to former readers and Jehovah's Witnesses in Germany. Several newspapers carried a portion of the protest and parts of this report in *The Golden Age*. As was to be expected, in several cities of Germany this issue was confiscated and many homes of the brethren were searched by the police to obtain this issue. However, the brethren are not afraid, and they count not their lives dear unto themselves, but still obtain the forbidden literature in small quantities from different points, and then particularly *The Watchtower* goes out to the brethren secretly. The witness continues in Germany in the face of great opposition.

Often we receive letters from Germany, such as this one:

"Here in Germany everything goes well. We are on His side and have joyful confidence. Following the request of our dear friend *Bulletin* we hereby report 12 workers, 326 hours, 350 books, 861 booklets, 1,714 testimonies. All those on His side greet you. . . ."

From time to time literature has been furnished to the German brethren to the best of the ability of those who could serve.

#### Convention

The convention of Jehovah's witnesses was held in Basel, Switzerland, September 7, 8 and 9. This was indeed the best convention yet held on the European continent. The following quotation is from the report of the local manager:

Right from the beginning, Friday noon, 1,500 brethren were present, and the number of participants increased until on Sunday there were nearly 3,000 friends present. These had come from all directions in Europe to attend the feast. They gathered from Austria, Yugoslavia, Rumania, Poland, Germany, the Free City of Danzig, Holland, Belgium, France and Spain and also from America. For some, and particularly for the friends from Germany and Austria, it meant a great sacrifice to come. Some traveled for days on bicycles, some by car, autobus and railway, in order to be at this meeting of God's people.

On account of the unfavorable political conditions in Germany it was difficult to communicate with the German friends regarding the convention, and yet nearly 1,000 German brethren attended.

It was inspiring to look at this great gathering of God's people. In all faces one could read the expression of joy and gratitude for all that the great Teachers, Jehovah and Christ Jesus, had to say to the gathering by their faithful servants. The words spoken were words of comfort and strength for all who are now particularly hard pressed by the enemy. Words of encouragement and words of instruction were given to those who withstand the enemy in the battle and who are privileged to give the testimony to His name and to His honor.

Brother Rutherford's presence at this convention was the fulfilment of a great desire, and his admonitions regarding the position of God's people in our day as he compared it to that of the three Hebrews and Daniel were very timely. His exhortation that the brethren should now in the coming days keep faithful to the great and mighty God Jehovah found a great response in their hearts. With tears of joy in their eyes they said unitedly: "Yes, by His grace we want to be faithful, come what may."

Saturday forenoon, from 9:30 a.m. to 1:00 p.m., a very important conference was held, at which Brother Rutherford presided and where he gave instructions to the general managers, to the local managers and to the regional service directors. Brother Rutherford explained clearly the order of the organization and the necessity of working together at this time. He said: "We have waited long for the critical time, and now it has come. Let us therefore meet it courageously and fearlessly." Some of the managers who had come from distant countries stated that this meeting and their attendance at the Basel convention was the greatest and happiest experience in their life.

The wonderful meeting closed with song No. 101, which, in that great hall, sounded like a mighty triumphal song of victory and wherein all promised to raise the standard of the Lord until the victory is won, and the words of the refrain are still sounding in our ears: "Thus saith Jehovah, I'll strengthen and help thee; fear not, my people, to smite."

The inhabitants of Basel also received a great witness. Saturday forenoon about 700 workers covered the city and 200 worked outside. The territory was limited, because of Basel's geographical situation, but, nevertheless, 537 books and 6,987 booklets were placed during the house-to-house service, and 1,000 booklets and 125 books were distributed at the time of the public meeting on Saturday night.

The public meeting was well advertised. It was attended by over 2,000 strangers and over 1,500 friends. A Catholic newspaper warned the people against the lecture and said that the words of Jesus, "Flee into the mountains!" were to be applied only to the time of the destruction of the city of Jeru-

salem in A.D. 70; which is another proof of the fact that the clergy class cannot divide the word of truth properly, that they are blind and do not see the danger which is now upon "Christendom". During the public meeting there was great quietness and remarkable attention. The Communists had distributed some leaflets before the meeting and they demanded a discussion, but they were prevented from causing any disturbance. Several men of the police force were also present at the meeting; also representatives of the Press, amongst them a representative of the German press, who had come from Geneva with the express purpose to attend this meeting. Two important newspapers, the *National-Zeitung* and the *Basler Nachrichten*, brought in advance a short article concerning the meeting, and in this article certain misleading reports of the German press were set right and it was clearly pointed out that Jehovah's witnesses have nothing to do with politics nor with any political organization. At the close of the public lecture the following Protest was adopted as a Resolution:

"For many years in the land of Germany Jehovah's witnesses and faithful followers of Christ Jesus, working unitedly under the direction of the WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY, have peaceably and earnestly engaged in bearing testimony to the name and kingdom of Jehovah God, and which preaching of the gospel has been of great aid and comfort to the people of that land. During the past year the visible ruling powers of Germany known as the Hitler government without cause or excuse have wrongfully seized, confiscated and destroyed the Bibles, song books, furniture and other property of these faithful Christians, prohibited them to meet together and worship God according to His commandments, and have cruelly persecuted and imprisoned many of such faithful Christians; and the rulers of said Hitler government, like Pharaoh of old, have wickedly opposed Jehovah God and defamed his holy name, and such visible ruling powers in that land by such wrongful actions have thus manifested the spirit of the Devil.

"THEREFORE, we, the followers of Christ Jesus and lovers of Jehovah God, assembled at Basel this 8th day of September, 1934, do most emphatically denounce and protest against the action of said Hitler government in persecuting persons because of their belief as barbaric, inhuman, anti-Christian and against Jehovah God and his Kingdom, and we call upon all fair-minded persons of good will throughout the earth to join with us in this denunciation and protest. We hold that the commandments of Jehovah God are superior to any rules made and promulgated by men and that all men should be

free to worship and serve Jehovah God and Christ Jesus according to the divine commandments, as set forth in the Bible. We hereby register our protest by declaring ourselves against Satan and all persecution and oppression and by taking our stand on the side of and declaring ourselves for Jehovah God and Christ Jesus his anointed King."

The crowd of 3,500 enthusiastically voted in favor of this Resolution and adopted it by raising the right arm and by giving a mighty and long applause.

#### Transcription Machines

As a further means of publishing the gospel in Switzerland, transcription machines have been put in use and the lectures broadcast both in English and in German. Our local men there have been manufacturing these machines. By the end of the year 125 meetings with transcription machines had been held, with an attendance of 2,000 persons.

The following table shows witnesses and their work in publishing the gospel within the territory embraced in the aforesaid jurisdiction, to wit:

#### TABLE

showing the results of the activity of the classes and pioneers in Austria, Belgium, Danzig, France, Italy, Luxemburg, Poland, Rumania, Saar Basin, Switzerland, The Netherlands, and Yugoslavia, for the period from Sept. 16, 1933, to Sept. 15, 1934

450 organized companies	6,500 company attendants
4,069 company workers	9,370 Memorial participants
170 pioneers	70 auxiliary pioneers

Country	Workers	Hours	Books	Booklets	Golden Age	Bibles	Copies	Subs.
<b>AUSTRIA</b>								
Companies	603	64,713	8,332	202,217	96,703	1,060	716	
Pioneers	9	9,948	1,785	35,412	859	18	38	
Auxiliaries	14	7,717	822	18,286	2,334	109	48	
<b>BELGIUM</b>								
Companies	51	8,592	725	36,269	11,931	77	156	
Pioneers	10	18,649	2,043	86,500	12,108	58	96	
Auxiliaries	5							
<b>DANZIG</b>								
Companies	200	11,154	1,739	56,269	21,389	33	18	
Auxiliaries	1	399	130	1,171	604			
<b>FRANCE</b>								
Alsatian companies	191	19,079	3,406	78,701	37,702	415	50	

<b>French</b>								
<b>Companies</b>	109	12,455	772	27,808	18,506	183		60
<b>Polish companies</b>	683	74,754	3,943	160,716	151,285	1,637	704	
<b>Pioneers</b>	62	85,113	39,075	265,529	60,721	269	263	
<b>Auxiliaries</b>	9	6,974	3,686	22,858	5,725	25	23	
<b>Shop in Paris</b>			1,425	12,967	4,950	1,315		160
<b>ITALY</b>								
<b>Auxiliaries</b>	1	70	104	643				4
<b>LUXEMBURG</b>								
<b>Companies</b>	13	1,318	170	2,617	3,000	258	21	
<b>Auxiliaries</b>	2	167	67	280	5	16	8	
<b>POLAND</b>								
<b>Companies</b>	593	70,627	5,214	72,471	87,439	900	1,309	
<b>Pioneers</b>	30	51,227	4,341	55,018	35,280			305
<b>Auxiliaries</b>	26							
<b>RUMANIA</b>								
<b>Companies</b>	613	37,528	521	87,238				252
<b>Pioneers</b>	6	5,551	739	25,096				123
<b>SAAR BASIN</b>								
<b>Companies</b>	158	18,481	2,010	38,567	21,908	109	35	
<b>Auxiliaries</b>	1	1,087	147	2,144	251	2	3	
<b>SWITZERLAND</b>								
<b>Companies</b>	711	65,374	20,807	258,309	164,602	2,026	58	
<b>Pioneers</b>	4	7,986	5,097	27,755	6,552	30	6	
<b>Auxiliaries</b>	6							
<b>THE NETHERLANDS</b>								
<b>Companies</b>	76	9,860	1,148	24,151	13,000	64		
<b>Pioneers</b>	34	56,100	5,997	125,170	50,487	49	15	
<b>Auxiliaries</b>	5							
<b>YUGOSLAVIA</b>								
<b>Companies</b>	68	5,796	580	20,313	4,708	144	6	
<b>Pioneers</b>	15	23,497	3,801	72,645	622	48	43	
Total, companies	4,069	399,731	50,792	1,078,643	637,023	8,221	3,635	
Total, pioneers	240	274,485	67,834	738,607	175,448	624	980	
<b>Grand Total</b>	4,309	674,216	118,626	1,817,150	812,471	8,845	4,615	
Books							118,626	
Booklets							1,817,150	
Golden Age copies							812,471	
Total pieces of literature							2,748,247	

**Production**

The Society's factory at Berne, Switzerland, headquarters of the Central European office, produces not only books for the territory above mentioned, but also much literature for Scandinavian territory. From the report of the local manager the following is quoted:

We printed literature in various languages, and, while the duty barriers and the fact that Switzerland holds to the gold standard have caused us some difficulties, we try with fair success to make up for these handicaps by zealous work and economy. Recently commercial treaties have been concluded between Switzerland and some other countries, such as Italy, Spain and Austria, which treaties are advantageous for us.

During this fiscal year our factory manufactured:

					Total including <i>Golden Age Watchtower</i> mis-
	Books	Booklets	copies	copies	cellaneous
1933-34	111,082	3,229,499	1,047,155	148,730	1,844,213

Because of the duty barriers orders to the amount of 355,000 booklets, for which we paid Francs 50,303.84, had to be given to worldly printing concerns.

Letters and cards received	19,746
Letters and cards dispatched	16,074

#### CHINA

During the year two pioneers have been working under the immediate jurisdiction of the Society's office at China. At the time of making up the report the placement of books by these pioneers has not been received. The local manager in Shanghai, together with the assistance of some others there, has placed during the year 11,183 books, the detailed report not having arrived to insert in this publication. During the year one radio station in Shanghai has regularly broadcast the Kingdom message every week, and the witness work is slowly but constantly increasing. The workers are few.

#### CZECHOSLOVAKIA

Czechoslovakia embraces territory that was once the scene of much religious controversy, when the enemies of the truth were persecuting those in earlier times who were devoted to Jehovah God and Christ Jesus. In the time of Huss, even though the truth was not so clear as now, many men were faithful to God in doing the best they could to serve him. There are doubtless great numbers of persons of good will in that country at the present time. The work in Czechoslovakia has progressed well during the year. The total number of books and booklets placed in the hands of the people in that country is, to wit, 452,492. This is an increase of almost 150,000 over previous years. In previous years the greater portion of the work in that country was done by brethren who emigrated from

other countries, but now these brethren must leave the country because of the enforcement of immigration laws, and so the work has been done chiefly by those who are natives and citizens. From the local manager's report the following quotation is made:

Considering the increase of appreciating the name of Jehovah in this country, it is further stated that Czechoslovakia is a state of different nationalities, in which eight languages are spoken - Bohemian, Slovakian, German, Hungarian, Russian, Ukrainian, Rumanian and Polish. The work is directed in all these languages from the Prague office, and eight languages are, for this proportionally small country, of course, a remarkable difficulty, but it is wonderful to see how Jehovah, in all conditions where we would be unable to overcome the things, shows a way out.

Czechoslovakia has a population of about 16 million people, which means about 3.5 million families. In the past year 1,338,769 testimonies were given, so that more than each third family received a witness about the Kingdom. The number of literature obtainers was 405,719, so that more than each ninth family received a piece of literature. The number of hours worked was 173,445: the number of books distributed, 34,586; the number of the booklets distributed, 417,906; the number of *The Golden Age* distributed, 150,000. This, for this proportionally small country, is surely a good witness and an appeal to all men of good will to take their stand on the side of Jehovah.

#### Pioneers

Many foreign brethren must, by circumstances already mentioned, leave the country, but pioneers of Czechoslovakian nationality took the place of the greater part of them. At the beginning of the fiscal year 104 pioneers were in the field. The number decreased, till in February there were only 77, but now again 93 pioneers are in the field. Because of the poverty of the people and other causes the pioneers have many difficulties and wants to bear, but they are going joyfully to the work, and Jehovah is blessing their efforts. Pioneers are active in the Bohemian, Slovakian, German, Hungarian and Ukrainian languages, and the correspondence of the Prague office must be handled in all these languages.

#### Territory

Besides the territories assigned to the companies, the country is divided into 124 pioneer territories. Of these, in 110 territories the witness was given wholly or for the greater part, in some of them two times, although in 14 territories the witness could not yet be given, or only for a small part. Now

that some more brethren are coming on as pioneers, we can hope that in the next fiscal year the witness can be given in all territories of the country.

#### **Companies and Sharpshooters**

It is remarkable to see how also in Czechoslovakia the Jondabs see their privileges and duties and that they begin to take their stand on the side of Jehovah and his organization. At the end of this fiscal year there are in Czechoslovakia 155 companies and sharpshooters, to compare with 104 at the end of the preceding year. Further, there are some companies of interested friends, and we hope that these also will soon take up the service work. These 155 companies and sharpshooters are of Bohemian, Slovakian, German, Hungarian, Russian, Ukrainian and Rumanian tongue. *Bulletins* and letters of instruction must be published in all these languages, except Rumanian, which, considering the small number of Rumanian friends, is translated to them by the Hungarian friends. The highest number of company workers was reached in March, in which month was the Thanksgiving Period. In this month the number was 898, yet the average number of company workers was 600. By the light from the temple the brethren now have a better understanding of their privileges, and also the work is now in a better organized shape than formerly.

#### **Service Periods**

Of course, especially important in the service were the international service periods, and of these the Kingdom Period and the Thanksgiving Period were the most important. The results of these two periods are as follows:

Kingdom Period	Books	Booklets	Workers	Hours	Testimonies	Obtainers
Sept. 30-Oct. 8	745	26,464	655	8,130	75,393	26,464
Thanksgiving Period						
Mar. 24-Apr. 2	673	32,961	1,019	11,713	95,605	28,781

#### **Creation**

Lectures out of the book *Creation*, supported by pictures and films, illustrating the creation and Biblical events till the vindication of Jehovah's name and his kingdom, held under the title "Creation Drama", were the means for a good witness in this country. This means has turned out very well here, because it is a good help for the partly primitive people to understand the printed and spoken word in a better way, and made it easier for many to understand the purpose of Jehovah and the establishment of his kingdom. Also with this means there was directed the appeal to many to take their stand on the side of Jehovah and further to read the books. The "Creation Drama" was shown in 41 places. The attendance was

25,305. 10,664 books and booklets were distributed on these occasions. That means that about every second person got something to read. 4,738 persons gave their addresses wishing to hear more about the truth. Now we have begun with the "Creation Drama" in the far east of the country, near the Rumanian border, where the Creation Drama is shown in Hungarian and Slovakian language, and we hope to Jehovah that also there it will go out as a great witness for his holy name. In this way the truth and the understanding of Jehovah's name is also increasing where low general education and the poverty of the people seemed to make it nearly impossible till now.

#### Transcription Work

About the end of the fiscal year the organization of the work with the transcription records has started. There were already in some places transcription meetings. Some companies have bought a transcription machine, and we hope that at the beginning of the new fiscal year ten transcription machines begin their work. Further, the work with the phonographs is now beginning. Also with the transcription records the work must be done in the named eight languages, because for several languages there are no brethren who are available for public service, and so it is a good help for the brethren not speaking one or another language of their territory, because this part of the people they reach by records. Where is no human (or no sufficient) tongue in all languages, there the Lord has in his wise provision given this means. It is our prayer that the Lord may bless also this part of the work in this country, that we can give next year a report of a great witness given by the transcription machines.

#### Opposition

At the beginning of the fiscal year a great persecution of Jehovah's witnesses began in this country, surely because the Devil was angry about the increasing of the work. The Society's office was searched under the indictment of espionage and a greater number of pioneers were arrested. All indictments brought against the Society and caused by the clergy, of course, could be seen to be wrong, and after the government had seen this, the persecution was stopped in the second part of the fiscal year, so that it can be said that at the moment the work can be done without greater difficulties. Of course, the pioneers in the whole country have to fight against the opposition and the persecution of the clergy, which do everything they can to hinder the distribution of the truth and to force men not to read the books. But, of course, Jehovah's witnesses go on with joy and zeal, notwithstanding all opposition. At the beginning of the fiscal year 281 proceedings against Jehovah's witnesses in behalf of their work for Jehovah's name were

pending; new during the fiscal year 101, finished during the fiscal year 182, so that there are pending at the end of the fiscal year 200. Of the finished proceedings, in 142 cases the defendants got free.

#### Outlook

At the end of the fiscal year we received the booklet *Eighteous Euler*. The message contained therein has caused the greatest enthusiasm among the brethren. We have the conviction that they with very great zeal will go on in this work, and we hope Jehovah may help us that in the next year a witness may be given in this country as never before. Jehovah our gracious God be thanked for all occasions of service which he has given us, and foremost that we still have in this country the opportunity to work for his holy name. We are determined to use all opportunities which the Lord gives us for his glorification.

#### DANZIG

Prior to 1914 Danzig was a part of the German Empire. Since 1920 it has been a free state under the protectorate of the League of Nations. Because of difficulties in Germany the work in Danzig was recently assigned to the Central European office. There are about 200 of Jehovah's witnesses residing in Danzig, who are quite diligent. During the year they have, while advertising the King and the Kingdom, distributed 1,869 books and 57,440 booklets, and placed in the hands of the people 21,993 copies of *The Golden Age*. The local manager reports, "Several times an officer of the law named 'Teuffel' (which, translated into English, means 'devil') appeared at the Danzig office and confiscated two issues of *The Golden Age*." We presume the Devil did not get much satisfaction out of those confiscated issues.

#### DENMARK

The fiscal year has seen a blessing upon the publication of the Kingdom message in Denmark. During the year there has been a decided and healthy increase, although the depression has increased amongst the people. Jehovah's witnesses in Denmark, like those in other parts of the earth, have the zeal peculiar to the Lord and amidst handicaps and other opposition push

forward in the work. The publication of the Kingdom message in that land during the fiscal year aggregates books and booklets to the number of 345,987. The local manager, in summing up the publication work in the land of Denmark, among other things, says:

Our quota in Denmark was 300 brethren out each week, 600,000 testimonies, 112,000 hours, 22,000 books, 250,000 booklets, 12,000 *Golden Age* subscriptions and 35,000 *Golden Age* copies. Actually we managed 278 out weekly, our highest number so far; 101,044 hours, 632,728 testimonies, 19,308 books, 326,679 booklets, 10,972 *Golden Age* subscriptions and 58,076 *Golden Age* copies. In this work the general experience has been that the testimony cards were a real help in the successful presentation of the message. Those with no interest in the message were automatically put on one side by themselves, while the brethren were thus enabled to concentrate on those who had some interest and so to hold out longer in the work. Our *en bloc* result for all literature spread exceeded last year's by no less than 37 percent. This shows it is good to have a mark and to strive to reach it. There is an increase in numbers out, in testimonies, in hours, in booklets, in *Golden Age* subscriptions and copies, and on bound books alone there was a small decrease of 4 percent.

The 53 companies organized for service, together with isolated brethren, spread 211,776 books and booklets in their spare time from purely altruistic motives, and additionally did a good deal of work for *The Golden Age*. In the March "week" the result attained in Copenhagen was specially noteworthy, for on that occasion 168 of the Jehu company, assisted by 34 of the Jonadab company, spread 22,211 pieces.

We have had 47 *Golden Age* representatives and auxiliaries busy during the year, and apart from their *Golden Age* work these placed 128,905 books and booklets. The work of going from house to house in their spare time in all weathers is by no means easy, but the Lord has richly blessed all their efforts.

The four regional service directors have been busy all the year, for, as you understand, the majority of the companies are but tiny and require help from time to time with the details of the organization method, which they gladly give. Additionally, they give talks on *Watchtower* articles, lead *Watchtower* studies, and are also out in the work with the friends. Their life is a full and happy one, for they also take meetings for the Jonadab friends, and it is enlivening to see the alacrity with which these spring up into the chariot and associate themselves with the work. It is a source of deep joy and great encouragement to the Jehu class.

Many, many of the Jonadabs have been interested by *The Golden Age*, which is surely a wonderful means of furthering the Kingdom interests. It was effectively used in connection with Hitler's persecution of our brethren in Germany, for in July we printed a 42,000 edition, which has been placed in the hands of the people. Without doubt that article will have had its due effect upon all who read it, and, as Denmark is Germany's neighbor, it had great interest for the people here.

#### EGYPT

In the land of Egypt, the seat of the first universal empire, the gospel is now being published under the immediate direction of Greek brethren, by the direction of the Society from headquarters. Twenty lectures by radio have been delivered, other lectures published in the newspapers and distributed to the number of 14,500, while books and booklets have been placed in the hands of the hungry people to the number of 440. The people are quite poor, but some of them are very anxious to have the message of the truth. From the local representative's report the following is extracted:

In my territory I have Armenians with whom I converse in the French or English language to introduce myself. The interest shown by them is quite great, and so I was enabled to place in their hands in 22 days, by the Lord's grace, upward of 440 books and booklets, in spite of the great poverty amongst them. It is certain that if an Armenian brother would be here he could form a company, because there are many Jonadabs among them. Some of them have confessed to me that they read the booklets over and over two and three times, and in such a case I am enabled to place with them bound books. Another told me that he read two booklets in one night; and another that he kept reading until the morning hours; and another, again, who was very poor, much enthused from the reading of two booklets, got all the books and booklets and gave me his address to provide him with any other new publication that would be issued by the Society.

#### ESTONIA

Publication of the Kingdom message in Estonia has increased during the fiscal year, and this to the great encouragement of the faithful witnesses who are there engaged in the service. During the year the Roman

Catholic hierarchy sent from the Vatican its representative to Estonia. At once the persecution of Jehovah's witnesses increased there, of course. So everywhere, the Devil uses the Roman Catholic hierarchy as his chief instrument for persecution, but in the face of all this the work goes grandly on. The responsibility upon these black birds, however, is fixed, and the Lord in his due time will fully recompense them. The distribution of the literature in that country, carrying the Kingdom message, reached a total of 62,213. The following extracts are taken from the local manager's report:

It is a great pleasure to again report a healthy increase in the activities of the Kingdom. The number of workers has grown from 10 to 21, resulting in the spread of nearly 19,000 more pieces of literature than were placed last year. The number of hours spent in the field is 16,451, whereas in the previous year it was 13,409. Just as the Lord would have it, many more people than ever before have had the vital importance of this witness work and their relation to it brought squarely to their notice; nearly eighty-four thousand people have themselves read the pointed testimonies presented to them. It is always a joy to dispatch literature to the field as well as to have a share in the distribution of it. During the year 62,213 pieces of literature, mostly booklets, have been sent out from the depot. This is an increase of 15,351 pieces over last year's figure. Surely the Lord is bringing forth his judgment unto the nations by the hand of his 'servant'.

Apart from the national tongue, the Russian language is understood by more people than any other. This factor has, till very recently, made it difficult to get into close contact with a certain part of the population. Now, however, three Russians have become interested and are taking up the work. Two of these are pioneers, and, with the more recently translated booklets, they are beginning to make an impression on the Russians in this country. Ten other pioneers have constantly and regularly carried out their commission to 'preach the gospel of the Kingdom', and this noteworthy fact is made manifest by their placing 51,907 books and booklets with the people. Two brethren worked for a short time as auxiliary pioneers and enlarged the total amount of literature spread by 744 pieces. The companies here are small in number, but large in faith and in persistent efforts to point the way to the Kingdom. Some of the brethren are isolated, but this has not lessened their enthusiasm. Together with the members of

the companies, thirteen in all, they have added 3,538 books and booklets to the grand total, while 'Jonadabs' to the average number of 5 have extended the witness still wider by spreading literature to the quantity of 3,825 pieces. At the depot there have been many inquiries for literature, and the fulfilling of these requests for the Kingdom message has augmented the yearly output by 981 books and booklets. The grand total of literature spread was 60,995 pieces. Of this number only about thirteen hundred were books, while the greater part of the remainder was composed of campaign booklets. As conditions are at present it isn't easy to place books and at the same time clear the shipments of the booklets that have come in such rapid succession. However, the warning to "Christendom" is being clearly sounded in no uncertain tones; the meek are learning righteousness and the way of escape from impending doom, and the name of Jehovah is being exalted. This is the feature of paramount importance.

#### FINLAND

The publication of the Kingdom message in Finland has also increased during the year. It is reported that the economic conditions there are very bad and the people have great difficulty in existing; but when persons are in distress they begin to think of what is the cause of the same, and, since God's Word holds the only explanation, it is to be expected that more will turn their attention to the examination of the Scripture truths. During the year there has been distributed, and thereby published, the Kingdom message to the number of 287,183 books and booklets. The local manager makes a comprehensive report, and from his report the following is quoted:

Our enemies have marveled how we can with such a courage do the work, although such laws have been passed which highly have hindered their work. The fascist party has many times threatened us. They have said that if they only get the control over the matters in our country they shall sweep away our movement. They succeeded to have our parliament to pass a law by which they hoped to quiet all those who were not with them, but the Lord says: "Vengeance belongeth unto me; I will recompense." And now it has gone so that the law which the fascists hoped to help them to put restrictions upon others has been applied upon themselves, and even their main paper has been many times prohibited to appear at all, and also at present it has been stopped for an uncertain time.

So the dear Lord has protected our work and we have had the joy to place much more.

BOOKS in the hands of the people: The whole quantity has been 287,183 books and booklets, which exceeds 33 percent increase compared with the previous year. This year we have got the following new books and booklets: *Deliverance II*, *Final War*, *Good News*, *Who Is God? Escape to the Kingdom*, *Dividing the People*, and *World Recovery*. Reprinted have been: *Government and Song Book*.

*The Watchtower* and *The Golden Age* have both appeared twice a month and brought us the Kingdom news, which have such a great stimulating and encouraging effect upon all who have fully consecrated themselves to the Lord and who are also trying to faithfully follow the instructions given by the dear Lord through his chosen channel. It is very remarkable and wonderful to see how only those who keep the commandments of the Lord are privileged to see the great and thrilling truths which now for the first time are fully opened before the eyes of the saints.

A great help during the year has been our little printery in our new house. The following figures show what has been done during the year: 313,100 *Golden Ages*, 33,630 *Watchtowers*, 15,955 *Bulletins*, 78,000 folders with message, 20,133 copies of *Who Is God?* 1,600 copies of *Song Books*, and 200,005 forms, posters, etc.; or, together, 662,423 copies of literature.

It has been a powerful means in our hands, helping the work forward, and the brothers handling the machines have become more skilled to do a better and quicker work.

THE RADIO in Tallinn did several years' good work even in our country, and the truth was heard all over, but the clergy were angry and two years ago they wrote in their biggest paper that the minister for foreign affairs in our country should ask the minister of foreign affairs in Estonia to stop the Finnish lectures; but nothing was done, before the Roman church sent its representative. He started such a powerful attack against our lectures that the government took the whole station, which formerly had been owned by private persons, and at once our lectures were stopped. For that reason the work with transcription machines in our country would now be of great importance.

OUR NEW HOME has been in many ways a great blessing for the work. It has not only helped us to make the arrangements for the work much better, but also financially it has helped us so that the rent has gone down almost 40 percent. Although it has been a hard time, yet many friends have seen their opportunities and have given donations so that we have been able to pay our expenses, which in a little, thinly populated country are comparatively great. It might also be mentioned

that this house silently testifies to the unity of the brethren everywhere, for a third of its cost was subscribed in England.

CONVENTIONS have now been gatherings in order to encourage brethren to the work. For that reason the service work has been the main feature of the conventions, and every one can realize that a convention now without service would be a failure. It is just the service which makes the conventions now to be feasts of joy. During the year there have been held, all together, 46 local conventions and one main convention in Helsinki. As it was just immediately after the fine London convention, we were able to bring to the friends fresh greetings and stimulating news, and we had a real fine convention here also, resulting in the big output of literature of 4,037, which is the greatest figure so far at any convention in our country. The whole output at the conventions has been 21,403, and 43 have been baptized.

PIONEERS AND AUXILIARIES have tried during the year to visit even the most remote places of our country. It has been a tiresome and very hard work, as the ways are poor and the distances between the houses so great that only few houses during the day can be reached. Only the peculiar zeal for the Lord can help a human creature to do the work with joy and endurance. Anyhow, the dear workers, 69 pioneers and auxiliaries, have had the privilege to leave in the hands of the people 103,514 copies of literature.

COMPANIES AND SHARPSHOOTERS have done more than half of the whole work done in Finland during last year. Many of them have come to very nice results. The whole amount of literature placed by them was 174,628. The brethren at Bethel have, during their free time, with zeal taken part in the service work, and during the big campaigns the office has always sent as many brothers as possible to lead friends in other companies to work. The office family of 14 brethren has had the joy to leave 14,883 copies of literature in the hands of those who appreciate the truth.

REGIONAL SERVICE DIRECTORS have visited companies and isolated friends in order to encourage them, and it is a pleasure for me to state that they have with great zeal in the service given a good pattern and their visits have been appreciated. The average of literature spread has been 3,659 during the year.

THE INTERNATIONAL SERVICE PERIODS are always great feasts. There is no doubt that it has pleased our great King to specially bless the service during such times. We have never before had so many out in the work as during the big last spring period. As a good many more than we have permit-holders took part in the work, it was apparent that many Jonadabs have been taken up into the chariot. Seemingly the work with Jonadabs just before us will be of special interest. It is grand

to see how the mighty and beautiful song to the honor of Jehovah Almighty, sung during several years by the Lord's anointed, sets other hearts to thrill and they also join in praising the eternal God. The whole output during these weeks has been 102,707.

#### FRANCE

The publishing of the gospel of the Kingdom in France has been attended with many hardships suffered by brethren there who are not citizens of that country. Shortly following the World War the French government encouraged many citizens of Poland to emigrate to France and gave them employment in working the mines, and other work, in northern France. A number of these Polish people came in contact with the message of the Kingdom and accepted it and used their spare time in preaching the gospel. Although they have rendered splendid service to the French government, and there is no complaint made by the French government of their work, yet many of these Poles, because of their devotion to Jehovah God and his kingdom and their distribution of the literature bearing the message, have been expelled from France. Many of these have been left without employment and with no means of support and with no money to return to their native land. A great hardship has been worked upon them. The French government also expelled Germans and English citizens who were there engaged in the pioneer service. This has made it difficult for the work to be carried on as successfully as had been hoped. In spite of this harsh treatment and expulsion and the workers' having been greatly reduced, the gospel of the Kingdom has been published in France during the year as follows: Books, 52,307; booklets, 568,579; *Golden Age*, 278,889; Bibles, 1,523. In addition to the above, the office at Paris furnished individuals during the year the following: Books, 1,392; booklets, 11,754, this making a total distribution in France during the year, of books, 53,699; booklets, 580,333.

From the local manager's report the following excerpts are taken:

In the month of September, 1933, we were invited to participate in an Exposition, where we could show and place our literature. Such expositions being always attended by many thousands of people, we thought this would be a good opportunity to display our books and to draw the attention of the people to our work and to the radio lectures. We were very pleased when hundreds of visitors stated that they regularly listen in to radio stations RADIO-VITUS and RADIO-LL in order to hear our lectures. Great was our surprise when about two weeks later we received from the Exposition Committee a Diploma with Gold Medal for religious writings. This encouraged us to participate in another exposition just before "Christmas", and this time the Society was awarded a Diploma of Honour with Golden Medal and Cross of the City of Paris.

As our purpose in participating in these expositions was not to get diplomas, we wrote to the Exposition Committee, asking why the Society was awarded these distinctions, whereupon we received the following letter:

**ART—COMMERCE—INDUSTRY—GASTRONOMY—HYGIENE**

Expositions organised for the welfare and with the help of social works of charity placed under important and high political patronage.

General Secretary:  
Emile Jalaguier  
4, Boulevard Saint Martin  
Paris X, Tel. Botzaris 25,63

**CENTRAL OFFICE FOR EXPOSITIONS**

PARIS, January 20, 1934.  
"LA TOUR DE GARDE,"  
129, Fbg. Poissonniere,  
PARIS.

To the Director:

SIR:

We have the honor to acknowledge receipt of your few lines of December 30 last year, which were addressed to our collaborer, Mr. Louis Criblet, who transmitted your message to us in due time.

Today we have the pleasure of answering it.

The Diplomas which have been appointed to you at the occasion of the expositions in September and December 1933 have been delivered as a recompense for the moral value of your work and the indisputable honesty shining forth from your literature.

With pleasure I remember here a conversation which took place at the time of the last exposition with regard to the propaganda in which you are actively engaged for the general welfare, when one of our principal collaborators expressed himself as follows:

The literature of the "Tour de Garde" is a symbol of honesty, loyalty and courage.

I make use of this opportunity to address to you my personal felicitation, assuring you of my best wishes.

CENTRAL OFFICE FOR EXPOSITIONS

*General Secretary:*

(Signature) E. JALAGUIER

This letter shows that these diplomas were awarded the Society not because of the outward appearance of our books, but because of their contents.

We then wrote a letter to the president of the City of Paris thanking him therefor; we also sent him *The Golden Age*. He replied as follows:

A.P.  
MUNICIPAL COUNCIL                    THE FRENCH REPUBLIC  
OF PARIS                                 Liberty — Equality — Fraternity

Paris, March 24, 1934.

To the Director of  
the Tour de Garde,  
Paris.

SIR:

I am much moved by the contents of the letter which you addressed to me. I thank you very much for your attention.

Yours faithfully,

(Signature) RENE FIQUET

We had never thought that these diplomas, given to us by men, might ever be of much help to us, since we place all our hope in Jehovah and in his Anointed.

In February very great difficulties arose which grieved the hearts of the remnant of this country, especially about the time of the Memorial and the Service Period which followed it. A circular letter issued by the Ministry of the Interior, dated February 27, stated our writings to be "subversive" and ordered the police and the gendarmerie (national guards) to expel from France all collaborators of the Tour de Garde who would be found distributing the writings of the Society.

Particularly the Polish companies and the pioneers were in danger. These were immediately informed of the decision of the Government and it was decided to continue the work in

spite of these measures, but to do it with greater precaution than ever before. It is interesting to see that in this year we had more workers than ever before. This because some believed that the opportunities of service might cease and they awoke out of their sleep.

We immediately took the necessary steps and referred with some measure of success to the diplomas which we had been awarded. In other countries as well, good use was made of them in order to overcome difficulties or to improve conditions.

In order to bring the matter to a head, we informed the Ministry of the Interior that we would display our writings again in an exposition in April. We did not meet with any difficulties, but to our surprise received the highest award, namely, the "Diploma of the Great Prize with Cross and Medal". The three diplomas we hung in the office of the Society and also published facsimiles thereof in *The Golden Age*.

Especially the clergy, who often claim our writings to be worthless and making the people ignorant, thus got a blow, for each witness now shows the people in the house-to-house service a small facsimile of the diplomas as well as of the letter above mentioned.

Thus the enemy, despite all the difficulties he caused Jehovah's witnesses, was not able to discourage them and to lessen their zeal. His opposition led God's people to a more faithful devotion, for no one wanted to be in the rear when the call went out: "Who is for Jehovah?" Even the expulsions which have taken place since March were not able to dampen the diligence and courage of Jehovah's witnesses. The Polish brethren expelled know that other opportunities of service will be given them in their home country. Jehovah is pleased with such faithfulness and therefore has blessed our small efforts.

#### GERMANY

This office is unable to report any definite account of work done in the publication of the gospel within the borders of Germany during the fiscal year. That there has been considerable witness work done there is no doubt, and this has had to be done under adverse conditions and such a handicap that reports are practically impossible. Amidst all the persecution that has been heaped upon Jehovah's witnesses in Germany the more zealous and faithful ones have braved these storms and gone ahead with their work, spending part of the time in prison and, as soon as released, again going at the work. Others have been fearful

and have done less or nothing. The cruel persecution heaped upon Jehovah's witnesses in Germany has tried them very severely. Doubtless there is no country on earth that has gone to the extremes similar to that of the Hitler government. Manifestly that man is under the direct supervision of the Devil and is his special representative on the earth. Fraudulently claiming to represent Christ Jesus he persecutes everyone who serves Jesus Christ and Jehovah God in truth and in faithfulness. The books and other literature of Jehovah's witnesses for the publication of the Kingdom message have been seized and many of them destroyed during the year. Many of these faithful followers of Christ Jesus have been put in concentration camps or other prisons and woefully ill-treated because they refuse to vote for Hitler or refuse to hail him as the savior of mankind. The faithful ones have determined to remain true and loyal to Jehovah God and take whatever punishment God permits to be inflicted upon them. This is the only way whereby the final test can be put upon any people in maintaining their integrity towards Jehovah. It may be confidently expected that in God's due time not only will he punish the persecutors of his witnesses, as he has promised, but he will fully release all of the faithful witnesses in Germany and give them further opportunity of making known his gracious Word of truth.

A number of German brethren crossed the border to Switzerland and attended the convention at Basel. These were greatly encouraged and enthused to go back and engage in the work again. Returning to Germany many of these were arrested and incarcerated in prison. Mail that is sent to them is seized; mail that is sent to this office is seized, and is never delivered. The German government attempts to prevent any communication between those who are wholly devoted to God and his kingdom.

**United Action**

During September 1934 it was determined that an effort should be made for a united action of Jehovah's witnesses throughout Germany and that they would continue to publish the truth. This arrangement was made by a letter's being addressed by the president of the Society to all the companies in Germany, and special messengers were sent to each company to deliver this letter and to prepare for the meeting or meetings that were to be held throughout Germany at a date certain. Following is the letter addressed to all of Jehovah's witnesses in Germany:

**MY BELOVED BRETHREN:**

You have heretofore made a covenant to do the will of God. He has taken you at your word, begotten you as His own, and called you to his kingdom. Christ Jesus at the temple of God has gathered unto himself the faithful and taken them into the covenant for God's kingdom. Such faithful ones God has anointed and commissioned to be his witnesses. It is to such that this letter is addressed.

Moses was a type of Christ Jesus, whom God raised up as his great Prophet, and now all who are of the anointed remnant must render complete obedience to God's great Prophet, Christ Jesus. (Acts 3: 22, 23) The commandments of Jehovah and of his great Prophet to the anointed, among others, are these: 'Ye are my witnesses that I am God'; 'go and tell the people'; 'this gospel of the kingdom must be preached as a witness'; 'forsake not the assembling of yourselves together'; 'study to show yourselves approved unto God'; "shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light."—Isaiah 43: 10-12; Isaiah 6: 9; Matthew 24: 14; Hebrews 10: 25; 2 Timothy 2: 15; 1 Peter 2: 9, 10.

Contrary to and in violation of the foregoing positive commandments from Jehovah God the government of Germany has forbidden you to meet together and worship Jehovah and serve him. Whom will you obey: God or men? The faithful apostles were placed in a similar position, and to the worldly rulers they said: "Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye. We ought to obey God rather than men." (Acts 4: 13-20; Acts 5: 29) No man has the right to command you concerning God's service. You are duty-bound by your covenant to obey God and Christ. I conclude, therefore, that you will obey Jehovah, and not man. I therefore advise as follows:

Let every company of Jehovah's witnesses within the land of Germany meet at some convenient place in the town where

you reside on Sunday morning October 7, 1934, at nine o'clock; that this communication be read to the assembled company; that you all then join together in prayer unto God, asking his guidance, protection and deliverance and blessings through Christ Jesus our Head and King; that you then immediately send a prepaid telegram to the government officials of Germany a copy of which is prepared and will be ready; that you then devote a brief period to the study of Matthew 10: 16-24; that doing this you all 'stand for your life' (Esther 8: 11); and that then the meeting adjourn and that you go out among your neighbors and bear testimony to the name of Jehovah God and his kingdom under Christ Jesus.

Your brethren throughout the earth will have you in mind and at the same time will be asking a similar prayer of Jehovah. United in the holy cause of righteousness and rendering ourselves fully in obedience unto God and his kingdom we may look with complete confidence for deliverance and blessing from God by and through Christ Jesus his great Vindicator.

Be assured of my love and best wishes.

Your brother and servant by his grace,

(Signed) J. F. RUTHERFORD.

Preparation was made in accordance with this suggestion for the meeting of all companies in Germany on the 7th of October, at which meeting the foregoing letter was read to those assembled. Thereafter the following message by telegram addressed to the German government was sent by each one, to wit:

**To THE OFFICIALS OF THE GOVERNMENT:**

The Word of Jehovah God, as set out in the Holy Bible, is the supreme law, and to us it is our sole guide for the reason that we have devoted ourselves to God and are true and sincere followers of Christ Jesus.

During the past year, and contrary to God's law and in violation of our rights, you have forbidden us as Jehovah's witnesses to meet together to study God's Word and worship and serve him. In his Word he commands us that we shall not forsake the assembling of ourselves together. (Hebrews 10: 25) To us Jehovah commands: 'Ye are my witnesses that I am God. Go and tell the people my message.' (Isaiah 43: 10, 12; Isaiah 6: 9; Matthew 24: 14) There is a direct conflict between your law and God's law, and, following the lead of the faithful apostles, "we ought to obey God rather than men," and this we will do. (Acts 5: 29) Therefore this is to advise you that at any cost we will obey God's commandments, will meet together for the study of his Word, and will worship and serve him as he has commanded. If your government or officers do violence

to us because we are obeying God, then our blood will be upon you and you will answer to Almighty God.

We have no interest in political affairs, but are wholly devoted to God's kingdom under Christ his King. We will do no injury or harm to anyone. We would delight to dwell in peace and do good to all men as we have opportunity, but, since your government and its officers continue in your attempt to force us to disobey the highest law of the universe, we are compelled to now give you notice that we will, by his grace, obey Jehovah God and fully trust Him to deliver us from all oppression and oppressors.

Respectfully,

JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES  
at \_\_\_\_\_

Acting in full unity with and in support of their brethren in Germany, Jehovah's witnesses throughout the earth assembled in their respective meeting places on October 7, 1934, and after presenting themselves before Jehovah in supplication through Christ Jesus each company of Jehovah's witnesses in America, Canada, Great Britain, Continental Europe, France, Switzerland, and other places, sent to the Hitler government the following cablegram:

\_\_\_\_\_, Oct. 7, 1934.

Hitler Government,  
Berlin, Germany.

Your ill-treatment of Jehovah's witnesses shocks all good people of earth and dishonors God's name. Refrain from further persecuting Jehovah's witnesses; otherwise God will destroy you and your national party.

JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES, \_\_\_\_\_

Just what effect this will have upon the German government no opinion is ventured. That, however, is not the important thing. That which is of vital importance to Jehovah's witnesses today is that they stand shoulder to shoulder, fully united for God and for his kingdom, bearing testimony before the world that Jehovah is God and Christ is King. Jehovah, having taken out his people from the world as witnesses to his name, must carry forward the work of publishing his kingdom. The real objective of send-

ing these messages to the Hitler government is to serve notice upon those cruel oppressors that Jehovah's witnesses will serve God and not man, and will be faithful to Jehovah and his kingdom and take whatever consequences come, fully trusting in God, who is able to deliver them and who will deliver them in his own due time. These faithful ones count not their earthly lives dear to them. They have an obligation to perform because they have sworn allegiance to God and to his kingdom. They have no desire or inclination to do injury to other creatures, but they must and will serve Jehovah by telling out his truth as he has commanded them. In doing this they are but faithfully following in the footsteps of Jesus, who earnestly and faithfully proclaimed the truth to the very last when on earth. Now in this end of the world Christ Jesus has committed unto the remnant his testimony, and these are commanded by Jehovah God as his witnesses to deliver this testimony, and they well know that Satan the Devil violently opposes them and will continue to oppose them until the great conflict is fought at Armageddon, in which Christ as Jehovah's Chief Executive Officer will gain the victory, end all oppression, and establish righteousness in the earth for ever.

As this report is being written information is just now received, of which the following is the substance: In some of the continental countries of Europe the postoffice that relays the telegrams refused to accept the telegrams for transmission, but the same message was immediately transmitted to Berlin by letter. At first the Berlin authorities refused to receive telegrams that were sent from some of the countries, wiring that they could not be delivered on account of Section 26 of the International Postal Agreement. Later the Berlin authorities sent out another wire which reads as follows: "Cancel our first wire. Your telegrams were later delivered to the Hitler Regie-

*rung.*" Thus the evidence is furnished that the telegrams reached their destination. On Tuesday night following a radio communication was broadcast from Berlin, in which the statement, in substance, was made: 'Thousands of telegrams were received in Berlin from a certain brotherhood, and this has made a great impression.' Other information coming through from Germany and just now received is to the following effect: "On October 7 in Germany all things were organized as ordered and Jehovah overruled the matter that the brethren in the whole country could assemble at the determined hour. The brethren were very enthusiastic about the special letter to Jehovah's witnesses in Germany and voted unanimously for the Resolution to be sent to the Hitler government. Following the sending of the message to the Hitler government the brethren went out and engaged in the house-to-house witness work. At Magdeburg the whole family were in the field and the Lord blessed them very much. One meeting was dissolved by police, but no one arrested."

The information concerning Germany in general is quite meager at this time. But, regardless of what that information discloses, the important thing is that Jehovah's witnesses have tried to prove their faithfulness to Him and to maintain their integrity toward Him and his kingdom. These faithful ones will now have in mind the words of admonition by the apostle, which were appropriate in the early days and which are now even more appropriate, to wit: "Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ; that, whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind, striving together for the faith of the gospel; and in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God. For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not

only to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake; having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me."—Phil. 1: 27-30.

#### GREECE

In the early part of the Christian Era the gospel was carried into Greece. It challenged the enemy organization. In modern times the gospel is being published in Greece, and it likewise challenges the present evil ruling power. The opposition to the Kingdom message is very great, and, because Satan observes that the truth is making inroads upon him and exposes the nefarious work of his agencies, it is very difficult to get books into Greece. So the Society is required to print much of its literature there. During the year there was placed in the hands of the people the published Kingdom message, books and booklets, covered and in paper binding, to the number of 172,697.

Albania is really a part of the Greek territory and the work is done in the Greek language, and there the message was published to the number of 3,435.

The following is extracted from the local manager's report:

It is true that the financial condition of the people, and especially in the country districts, is going from bad to worse, and the clergy find opportunity to attribute all this to the spreading of the truth, and try to persuade the people to burn the books. How true the words of Brother Rutherford in the booklet *Righteous Ruler*: "When the humble and timid one in the church organization obtains a book explaining the truths of the Bible, and the clergyman learns this fact, he urges that the book be destroyed." This happens daily in the work; still the Lord is able to turn man's wrath to His glory. Lately some brethren went to a small town to give the message, and the priest, having heard of this, spoke in the church urging the people not to buy any of the books. The people misunderstood his words and they thought that he recommended to them the books as good; so when the brethren visited them they were eager to get the booklets, saying that the priest recommended the books to them.

There are in the field 5 regular pioneers spending all their time in the witness work, and 5 other brethren spending part

of their time. It is true that the work out in the country is very difficult for the brethren, because there are no traveling facilities, and the brethren suffer very much. Many times they have to walk long distances, carrying the load of the books with them, and, after doing the work there, they are compelled to return because they have nowhere to stay at night. During the winter, which was unusually severe in Greece, two brethren in the work, as they returned on foot, were compelled to sleep in the wood, and were in danger of being devoured by wolves.

#### HAWAII

Only a few months prior to the end of the fiscal year Hawaii was under the immediate direction of the Brooklyn office. Now a branch office has been opened at Honolulu, and this office will have jurisdiction over all the Hawaiian Islands. The witness work has progressed to some degree, but we hope greater results will be obtained during the ensuing year. During the year there have been placed in the hands of the people books and booklets to the number of 11,321. From the local manager's report the following is extracted:

Now we have mapped out the territory for them and started a territory assignment system, so that a record will be had of where each one is working and what he places, and enable a thorough witness to be given. Under the former arrangement parts of the city were rarely covered, and other parts were gone over and over many times. Also, each worker will have a definite individual territory, and will feel more keenly the responsibility for taking the testimony to the people in it.

TRANSCRIPTION MEETINGS: Nine meetings were held, with a total attendance of 246, at which 31 booklets and one book were placed. By the Lord's grace more will be accomplished next month, since much time was taken up fixing up the book room and office. Also, we now have a car, in which we have mounted the transcription machine, and this will make more meetings possible.

#### HOLLAND (THE NETHERLANDS)

Holland continues to push steadfastly forward in publishing the message of Jehovah's kingdom under Christ. The numbers are few, but their zeal is peculiar to the Lord's house. They love God and serve him, and this they do in the face of opposition, as indeed they could not do otherwise and at the same

time be faithful to Jehovah God. From the local manager's report the following is taken:

During the year, there were on an average 76 company workers, 34 pioneers and 5 auxiliaries in the field, or a total of 115 workers, to compare with 88 during the previous year. This means an increase of 32 regular workers. It is encouraging to see that the work was done with greater zeal and joy than formerly, and this made it possible, by the grace of the Lord, to place more literature in the hands of the people than during any previous year.

Here are some figures regarding the work done by the pioneers and the companies:

	Hours	Books	Booklets	G.A. Copies	Total
Pioneers	56,100	5,997	125,170	50,487	181,654
Companies	9,860	631	22,718	10,933	34,282
<b>Total</b>	<b>65,960</b>	<b>6,628</b>	<b>147,888</b>	<b>61,420</b>	<b>215,936</b>

Added to this, the office delivered to individuals, books, 517; booklets, 1,433; making a total for the year for Holland of 156,466. Added to that, copies of *The Golden Age* were distributed, bringing the total up to 281,373 pieces of literature.

#### Companies

There are but small companies of witnesses of Jehovah in Holland. The 76 regular company workers belong to 12 companies. The number of attendants at the company meetings exceeds that of the workers by about 10 percent. On the other hand there are also some Jonadabs who help to carry the message of the Kingdom to the people. Some of them regularly send in money accompanied by a list of names and addresses to which we are to send literature. This is an encouragement for Jehovah's witnesses.

#### Service Weeks

There were five service periods during this year. In these 80 company workers put in 3,563 hours and distributed 131 books, 9,323 booklets, and 2,327 *Golden Age* copies; giving a total of 30,544 testimonies, obtainers, 10,719.

The average number of 33 pioneers and 5 auxiliaries participating in these special campaigns worked 10,145 hours and placed 879 books, 29,500 booklets and 4,793 *Golden Age* copies, giving thereby 135,916 testimonies. The number of obtainers was 32,122.

A comparison of these figures with those for the whole year discloses the interesting fact that during the service periods the brethren worked literally with double zeal. In many cases, too, more than double results were obtained.

Those facts justify our hope that it will be possible to obtain still better results during the coming year, if all continually are animated with a fiery zeal for the Lord.

#### Persecutions

As mentioned already in the previous annual report, the enemy is very angry because of the progress of the work, and he resorts to any means in order to find men who will do his bidding, whom he may use in his efforts to stop the witness work. In southern Holland (Noord-Brabant) we had a pioneer home. The people in this part of the country are almost exclusively Catholics, and for two years a thorough and strong witness went out to these from the pioneer home. There had always been efforts made with a view of stopping this work, but they had been of no avail. Then a new Minister of Justice entered the government, and this one gave heed to the accusations of the clergy, in that we were threatened that if the work were continued in that district all the foreign pioneers would be expelled. At the same time an order was issued forbidding further pioneers of foreign nationality from entering the country. No doubt the Devil intended to have all the foreign pioneers expelled and to thus stop the work, because there would have been no possibility of replacing the expelled workers and because the witness is almost exclusively given by foreign pioneers. However, he did not consider that Jehovah's time to give the warning witness had not yet expired.

#### Radio

There is as good as no opportunity in this country of giving the witness over the radio. The only opportunity to broadcast a lecture is granted us when the president of the Society appears personally. The enemy knows that this does not happen often.

We hope that the transcription machines will to some extent be a substitute for the radio lectures. We expect to be able to start with this work during the coming year.

#### Prospects for the Future

Every year we have tried to look into the future, and our joyful hope for the further prosperity of the work has always been fulfilled. Each year greater unemployment, heavier burdens upon the people, and in spite of this the witness work has increased year by year. Jehovah blesses His work. The Devil, however, does not remain inactive; which is shown by the fact that recently some new laws have been enacted regarding the "protection and security of the State", according to which one is forbidden to insult or to vex by pictures, by books and by word of mouth, certain classes of people (read: the clergy).

**Office**

During the year there were four employees working in the office, two of them only half-days. These did all the office work, including the translation of *The Watchtower*, *The Golden Age*, the books and booklets.

**HUNGARY**

If those who think have had any doubt that Satan is governing this wicked world and keeping the people in the dark by the use of religion, a knowledge of what goes on at the present time against Jehovah's witnesses would remove all such doubt. Before the war Hungary and Austria were operating under the same government and the Roman Catholic hierarchy was uppermost in religious matters, exercising its powerful influence amongst the politicians and commercial wings of the government. When Jehovah sent his witnesses into that land to enlighten the people, the enemy attacked them with great viciousness, and has kept it up since. In the face of this cruel persecution, during the year that is past, people of good will received into their hands books and booklets to the number of, to wit, 79,448. The local manager says:

All meetings of friends were forbidden, and even when the friends came together in a secret manner they were oftentimes found by the police, and then some of the friends got hard blows, and were thrown into prison and other things were done to them. Under these circumstances, to organize the witness work was impossible. But under Jehovah's protection within the past year several changes came up in this. The fanaticism of persecuting the friends stopped in several places, and energetic efforts were made to go on with the work. Our gracious God Jehovah gave his blessings, and the result is that in the past fiscal year an enormous increase of the distribution figures is to be seen, viz., an increase of the distribution figures for the booklets, 1,000 percent, and the distribution figures of the books, 50 percent.

More than 50 percent of the distributed literature, namely, 35,769 pieces, was distributed in the capital town of the country, Budapest, and surroundings. The reason is, of course, that in the capital town the authorities are more tolerant than in smaller places. So the friends here can work better and do not have to suffer so much under the intolerance as in other

places in the country. Nine pioneers and 30 company workers are working in Budapest and surroundings, and from this central point of the country now this influence goes out gradually to the friends in the country, not to fear the enemy, but to go on, praying the Lord that he may protect everybody who is active in the witness work. The light of the temple encourages the friends, so that now Jehovah's witnesses learn better that Jehovah is God and that he protects everyone who trusts him.

#### Booksellers' Shops

A special Press law of the country gives permission for distribution of books only by regular booksellers' shops. Therefore we organized in the whole country booksellers' shops with small rooms, and from there the friends can get books and booklets and distribute them in the surroundings of the shops. Until now we have seven such shops in Hungary. We shall look for more.

#### Opposition

Of course, today Jehovah's witnesses still have to suffer under great opposition, and the reason for persecuting the friends also in this country is to be found in the clergy's circles, which are bringing to the authorities false indictments against Jehovah's witnesses. Twenty-four proceedings were pending in Hungary in the past year. Nine cases were finished and the friends got free, and in twelve cases the friends were punished because they either came together and studied Jehovah's Word and prayed to him or because they were going and giving witness for his name. Even the highest court punished a sister with five days in prison, only because she loaned to a friend of hers a *Harp of God*. In different places of the country, especially places where the influence of the Catholic priests is strong, today the friends still cannot openly come together, not even to pray to God and study his Word. In other places the policemen, when the friends leave their houses, follow them, looking to see if they meet any other friend in his house, and if so, they come in and push them out. In these places two of the friends cannot yet come together. Notwithstanding, the friends are joyful and willing to go on, knowing that Jehovah is stronger than all his enemies.

At present 16 pioneers and 4 auxiliaries and 303 company workers are working, to compare with 7 pioneers and 80 company workers in the past year.

#### ICELAND

The population of Iceland is very small. The opportunity to publish the message of the Kingdom is likewise much restricted. During the year 3,893 books

and booklets have been placed in the hands of the people.

#### INDIA

As Armageddon approaches, Jehovah continues to send his witnesses out to make a wider publication of the Kingdom, and thus more people in the benighted countries are enabled to take their stand on Jehovah's side. The work in India, carried on with many difficulties there and greatly handicapped both because of the climate and because of opposition from the enemy, has progressed even though a small number have been engaged in publishing the message of the Kingdom. Under the blistering sun, amidst the dust and filth in that benighted land, the faithful brethren push forward. Brethren who have gone from England to that country have bravely met these conditions and have been going forward during the year with great zeal for the Lord and his kingdom. Being weakened often in their physical strength by virtue of the many hardships, the Lord has strengthened them spiritually and renewed their strength physically and sent them on. The publishing of the message of the Kingdom has reached a higher degree this year than any time heretofore. Books and booklets to the number of 102,792 have been placed in the hands of the people by members of God's faithful remnant now operating in India. From the local manager's report the following is extracted:

The year just closed has marked another signal increase of activity and effective witnessing. For the first time in our history we have reached the six-figure mark in book output. A total of 102,792 books and booklets has been distributed, which is an increase of about thirty-four thousand on last year. *Golden Age* subscriptions have nearly doubled and, as may be expected, the howls of the shepherds of "Christendom" resulting from these "locust" stings are being heard.

Our field covers the whole of India, Burma and Ceylon. It is a vast area. Much has been done, but much more remains to be done before it can be said that the message has been preached to every creature, even of the professed Christian communities. The entire field has been fairly generally cov-

ered, and, so far as the European and Anglo-Indian communities are concerned, a very thorough witness has been given, but amongst the Indians there remains much pioneer work to be accomplished.

The largest consolidated interest is in the state of Travancore, in southern India, where three Indian pioneers and some 250 to 300 company workers are regularly in the witness field. Nearly half of the total output for the year has been placed by these workers. There is real, intelligent grasp of the truth amongst them, and they are lifting high the standard of truth before their fellow countrymen. *The Watchtower* is published monthly in their own language (Malayalam), and there are 392 subscribers. This has been the chief means whereby they are kept abreast of the revelation of truth. There is a cry to have this magazine published semimonthly, so as to keep up with the English edition, but the expense of such a limited demand prevents us from doing this.

In the north of India there is also a consolidated interest and activity among the Indian Christians. This is a comparatively new field, but progress is well maintained. Evidence of their zealous witnessing is found in the almost incessant tirade of abuse which is published in the vernacular press by the clergy and their allies against these witnesses. These clergymen (Indian and American) seem to be unable to grasp the meaning of Jeremiah 25: 34-36 and to appreciate that the Lord foretold of them. It is Jehovah who is spoiling their pastures.

In other parts of the field there is little consolidated activity or interest. In Burma there are small, zealous groups working systematically. In Bombay city we have a small company in regular service, but throughout the remainder of this vast field there are only isolated ones and twos sufficiently appreciative of the good news to take an active part in its proclamation. But the numbers are gradually increasing.

#### Pioneers

The pioneers undoubtedly form the backbone of the general witness work. There are eight English and ten Indian pioneers in the field. We are using three house-cars, two of which are equipped with transcription machines, and one carries a cinema for the Photo-Drama work amongst the Indians. If only we had transcription machine records in the various Indian vernacular languages, there is no doubt a marvelous work could be accomplished. One pioneer (Anglo-Indian) was removed by death during the year, but the Lord raised up another to take his place. These 19 pioneers placed 62 percent of the total literature.

The following table will show at a glance the details of output of literature.

	Books	Booklets	Vernacular	Miscellaneous	Total
Pioneers	7,725	25,937	30,169		63,831
Auxiliaries	472	2,529	1,443		4,444
Company workers	957	9,056	22,943		32,956
Mail	99	196	1,046	220	1,561
<b>Total</b>	<b>9,253</b>	<b>37,718</b>	<b>55,601</b>	<b>220</b>	<b>102,792</b>
Average per Month	Hours		Testimonies	Obtainers	
Pioneers	19	22,432	126,338	34,088	
Auxiliaries	3	1,320	10,819	3,512	
Company workers	186	28,559	105,707	19,248	
		52,311	242,864	56,948	

#### Special Campaigns

These campaigns rank most important of the year's activities. Figures show that 28 percent of the total hours spent in the witness work during the whole year were spent during the forty-five days set aside as special testimony periods, while 21 percent of the total literature was then placed. The following table shows the summary of this activity as compared with the previous year's.

	Output	Hours	Testimonies	Obtainers	Highest Number of Workers	Average Number of Workers
1933	16,264	13,215	33,617	10,655	270	147
1934	22,494	14,816	65,107	14,467	327	222

#### Transcription Machine Work

When last year's report was made we had only just received our first transcription machine. Now we have five electrical ones and three gramophones in service. The results obtained have been varied. Indoor meetings have been almost fruitless, but in this country of rainless months outdoor meetings are obviously ideal. The greatest obstacle is the language problem. The European is, on the whole, far too snobbish to identify himself with an open-air crowd, but the Indians will gather into a crowd anywhere and for any purpose. Indians will gather round and evince their curiosity by trying to climb into the horn of the loud-speaker, even though they cannot understand a word of what is being said; but out of the crowd there are always some who are more intelligent, and many a time have some of these come forward to find out more on the subject of the Kingdom. We are looking forward to the new smaller records for use on an ordinary gramophone. Where facilities for transportation are limited (and this is generally the case) the smaller outfit should be a real boon.

### Vernacular Publications

It is becoming more apparent that a great work is yet to be done among the Indians who cannot read English. They represent the masses of India, and especially the Christian community. Slowly but surely is this work progressing, and each year sees a few more Indians coming forward to take an active part in proclaiming the message of the Kingdom to their countrymen.

The provision of vernacular literature is one of our greatest problems. There is a great cry for much more than we print. It requires a considerable outlay of money, and there is little return for it, but progress is being made. The following booklets have been published during the year: *The Crisis*, in Tamil and Burmese; *Escape to the Kingdom*, in Urdu and Tamil; *Who Is God?* in Malayalam; *Dividing the People*, in Malayalam, Tamil, Urdu, and Karen (Burma); *Intolerance*, in Malayalam. A tract on the "Trinity" was published also in Urdu. The new booklet, *Righteous Ruler*, is now being translated and published in various vernaculars, as well as a Telugu and Kanarese edition of *Dividing the People*.

And so another happy year of service has ended and we launch out into a new year, determined to press the battle to the gate towards the vindication of Jehovah's name.

### ITALY

In that land of darkness is the headquarters of the Roman Catholic hierarchy, and this instrument of Satan has its agencies in every part of the government, and particularly the "strong-arm squad". The following is an excerpt from the Italian report:

One pioneer who worked in the section which formerly belonged to Austria was finally stopped altogether. The police everywhere was hateful towards the message of truth. Some literature, however, is being sent to isolated brethren from time to time. A few brethren report how they suffer because they are not able to do more for the Italian people who appear to be hungry for the truth. The Lord knows why He permits these conditions, and the leaders of the Italian nation, who have been warned by God's people, are only increasing the wrath of God's judgment upon them.

In Italy the distribution of books and booklets totaled only 747.

### JAMAICA

The faithful remnant in Jamaica have been doing their best to publish the Kingdom message. During

the fiscal year they have placed in the hands of the people 36,029 books and booklets, besides holding many meetings and thus by word of mouth publishing the Kingdom message. From the local manager's report the following is quoted:

It is quite a joy to forward our annual report for 1934. First, we ascribe praise to God for his mercies and supervision of the work in Jamaica. Although conditions have forced many of the pioneers out of the field, still the work goes on. The Lord has opened a new feature of service by the use of the transcription machines, and as a result some 50 of the Jondabas have been rescued. The loud-speaker machine is heard at times two miles away, and the demand for these lectures has increased. The public is much awakened to the study of the Bible. The workers are growing more interested in the witness work.

From the poor condition of electricity we had to secure a Stilco plant to enable us to deliver the lectures in every town and village of the island. This incurs extra expense in having to travel with an electrician until we are able to carry it on ourselves.

We are permitted to deliver the lectures in a big race track in Kingston where thousands attend. We find that asking questions after each record is played awakens much interest at public meetings. This is another glorious feature of service.

*The Watchtower* plays a wonderful part in causing all to see eye to eye. It checks disorders among the brethren by showing the right interpretation of certain questions.

#### JAPAN

Japan has long been classed by the nations of "Christendom" as a heathen nation. The word *heathen*, however, would apply to "Christendom" about as well as it does to Japan. The Roman Catholic hierarchy there, now aided and abetted by Protestant clergymen who merely work for hire, have attempted to teach the Japanese, but have used religion more for commercial purposes than for any other, and religion has enabled them to establish missions there, by which they get the necessary material things for a living; but they not only have kept the Japanese in darkness but have prevented them from hearing the published message of the Kingdom. The misrep-

resentations by the clergy to the police officials of the land have brought many difficulties upon Jehovah's witnesses in that country. The books and other literature have been seized and confiscated, many of the brethren arrested and thrown into prison, and now only *The Golden Age* can be published and distributed. The zeal of the Japanese brethren, however, has not been dampened by this persecution. The government refuses absolutely to permit the importation of any of the Society's publications. Hence *The Watchtower* and books and booklets cannot be shipped into that country. The Japanese brethren are enabled by the grace of the Lord, however, to have the *Watchtower* articles in the Japanese language in their hands to enable them to keep abreast with the unfolding of God's prophecies. The *Golden Age* magazine is published in the Japanese language under the provisions of the newspaper law. Notwithstanding the opposition, this part of publishing the Kingdom message has gone forward during the year, and the circulation of that magazine totaled during the year to the number of 1,143,000. Each issue of the magazine carries the message of the Kingdom, the matter there published being taken from *The Watchtower* and books and booklets of the Society. There are now 31,000 subscribers regularly on the list receiving the magazine, besides the numbers being placed in the hands of the people by the faithful remnant who go from place to place to publish the same. Before the publication of the *Golden Age* magazine the name of Jehovah never was heard of in Japan, but now the people are quite familiar with the name Jehovah and his witnesses. Several Jonadabs have come forward and manifested not only their interest in God's kingdom message, but their zeal in making it known to others. There are 65 regular workers in the field, the ages of these ranging from 14 to 73 years. These workers left their former positions and their relatives,

and for the love of God and his kingdom have gone forth in the work, and are doing with their might what their hands find to do. The zeal of these dear Japanese witnesses for Jehovah is remarkable in many respects. Surely God has marked them as his own, and they are specially privileged to serve him in that manner. These witnesses travel on bicycles and carry with them tents in which they live. The roads are bad and the air is damp, especially during the rainy season, and thus it is observed that these witnesses of Jehovah work under great difficulties. As a sample of the difficulties under which these faithful publishers of the Kingdom message work in that land the following letter is published:

DEAR BRETHREN: Greeting in the name of Jehovah and our Lord Jesus Christ. I am so glad and thank God to hear the victorious news to his holy name in Japan. Now we do work in the reflection of the present truth with such a great joy. Here is a good news that shows his gracious protection for his people. Yesterday I left my tent for Hommojiri, a little village about 13 kilometers in distance, on the bicycle myself alone. All the road is covered with such thick forests and high grass hardly to pass. I had to cross the streams on foot. Surely it was the hardest pass I ever experienced. There are many poisonous vipers and wild bears in the mountains, and the people in the vicinity are very afraid to pass this road. But I was quite safe all the way through under His protection. Finally I reached Hommojiri and delivered the message of the Kingdom by placing many copies of *The Golden Age*. Then I left there for Nokanan, the next village located another 12 kilometers from Hommojiri. I had to pass another bad mountain road. It is so narrow that I had to push my bicycle on foot. But, thank God, I could reach my destination safely at last. And I have found there some interesting things were waiting for me.

I have visited a Christian first as usual, and I have found that there is a Christian meeting being held at his home. I was invited to the meeting and I had a good opportunity to give a long testimony to the name of Jehovah God. Then a young man said to me, "The other day when I visited Sapporo city [the capital city of Hokkaido], I bought some copies of *The Golden Age* from a lady. I have read them carefully and got such a great shock. I brought them with me here and showed them to my fellow Christians around here. Now a great question arose among us." Thus I was given a best opportunity to explain the truth to them. They have listened to me till

the midnight. The next day I left them and returned to our tent where my partner (a young brother of 17 years old) was waiting for me. We thank God for the blessings bestowed on us and for his gracious provisions wherever we go. The grace of God and our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all at the branch office.

At the Society's office 13 persons are employed to prepare the literature for distribution amongst the people. These spend a part of the time in the field in publishing the Kingdom message. While only a small number of workers operate in Japan, 195,518 people in the Japanese country have received the witness during the year. From the local manager's report the following is quoted:

There are two regional service directors working in Japan. As I said above, we have no company in Japan. So the work of the regional service directors is something different from that in America and European countries. In Japan they go round to visit pioneers and others to find and exchange the better ways for the field service. During the last fiscal year they traveled 32,831 kilometers, had 109 meetings, with 1,469 attendants.

During the year the Society's office at Tokyo received 5,263 mails and dispatched 8,341 mails.

As to your advice, I wrote to Viscount Saito asking for an interview with me. He is the former premier and the man who is responsible for the great oppression upon Jehovah's witnesses in Japan last year. My request is granted, and I called on him at his home on September 6 last.

I had a good opportunity to explain the Truth for one hour and fifteen minutes. We both had a Bible in hand, and he read the scriptures when I point them carefully. I told him about the reason why Armageddon comes, why the name of Jehovah must be vindicated, how the Lord will bless mankind with life and happiness. He has listened to my speech very carefully. After I finished he said: "I got the report concerning Jehovah's witnesses last year at the cabinet meetings. The public press wrote much about your people. The police department did not report to me about particulars except the 'facts', so called. I was too busy to attend this case at that time. Now I hear your explanation about the things which written long years ago and the work which you are doing. I see that you have no intention to do anything with political affairs in Japan. I will take this matter to Mr. Karasawa, the general chief of police of Japan, and you better see him yourself. I am sure he will do something for you." The inter-

view is ended and he promised me that he shall meet with me again, and he showed me off at the porch, which is very unusual for the customs in Japan. I think I will see the general chief in the very near future.

#### KOREA

The witness work in Korea is small, yet the gospel of the Kingdom is published. Nine pioneers and sixteen company workers have engaged in the publication of the message there. The placements amount to 34,283 booklets. The people of good will, otherwise known as "Jonadabs", are awakening in that land, finding their only hope is the kingdom of God under Christ. And thus the gospel is being carried to the uttermost parts of the earth.

#### LATVIA

In this little country on the Baltic sea the proclamation of the Kingdom message progressed for a time during the first part of the year and books and booklets to the number of 31,090 were placed in the hands of the people, which is a decided increase over the previous year; but the Devil, acting through his active agents, the clergy, who took advantage of disturbed political conditions, caused the books of the Society to be seized and the office closed. The following excerpts from the local manager's report are here inserted, to wit:

The winter was a difficult one for the pioneers. The weather, instead of continuing cold with plenty of snow, alternated between frost and thaw. This condition made traveling in the country places most difficult, as, instead of the surface of the ground being hard, it had, more often than not, a covering of water over underlying ice. One pioneer, writing from a railway station where he had temporarily taken refuge, said that the view of the countryside was as of a great lake. These conditions were unusual for this country, and continued practically all winter. Notwithstanding these difficulties, the number of pioneers working throughout the year averaged 9 out of 10 whose names appear in the Society's books, and the number of booklets spread by them, 21,498, represented an increase of more than 58 percent over the previous year.

This forward movement was later to meet with something

in the nature of a setback. In one way or another we are continually kept aware of the opposition of the clergy. In the month of December the Ecclesiastical Department of the Home Office took exception to a sentence in the Russian translation of the booklet *The Final War*, which was issued about that time. When the matter was brought before the court, however, judgment was given in our favor. There is little doubt that we should succeed in every similar case were the matters always brought to the court for judgment. The enemies of the truth, however, prefer other methods, less open.

On May 16, following a coup d'état during the night preceding, when all political opponents were arrested and imprisoned, martial law was proclaimed in all the country for six months. This gave our enemies the opportunity they needed for their iniquitous work, and they took advantage of the exceptional conditions prevailing at the time, to have the Latvian Society closed on the false ground that its activities were communistic. The announcement was made in the Government Gazette, dated 5th July, and liquidators were appointed at the same time, the chairman being a clergyman (the same individual who was mainly responsible for the action taken against the *Final War* booklet, mentioned). Shortly thereafter the office books of the Society were removed, and later the liquidators took possession of some 45,000 booklets and Bibles, the property of the Latvian Society. From the date of the closure all sums due from the pioneers and companies must be paid to the liquidators, and it has been officially announced that all money thus received, with whatever is obtained from the sale of the stock of books taken, will be retained by the Government.

Some surprise and many comments have been made owing to the closing of the Society. The people know that its teachings are not subversive, and they wonder. This has given many opportunities to explain the position and to expose the hypocrisy of the clergy and to show that the only hope for the world is the Kingdom.

At the time of writing there is a reasonable hope that we may yet get going again; there are two alternative proposals under consideration. Looking to the Lord for help we hope that soon something will be accomplished in this direction.

For some time past *The Watchtower* has taught us to expect that the clergy and others would conspire in just this way in an effort to prevent the truth's going to the people. We are not, therefore, surprised at what has taken place here; the clergy are clearly identifying themselves as the Lord's enemies and associates of the Devil. The Lord will recompense them in his own time and way.

Since the first booklet was printed in Latvia, in June, 1933, more than 40,000 have been spread among the people, 31,090

coming within the present fiscal year. The work has been a joy and pleasure to everyone who has had a share in it, and the only thought of the anointed now is as to how soon it will be before we can recover the books and continue to witness to the praise of Jehovah.

Our confidence is in Jehovah; our trust is in Him, and we look to him for help. We know that the day of battle is approaching; we can see the forces lining up for the conflict, and we rejoice that the Lord has given us some share in his work, which will culminate in the great battle of the Lord God Almighty, when, once and for ever, he will settle accounts with his enemies and vindicate his great name, that men may know that he, "whose name alone is Jehovah," is the Most High over all the earth.

#### LITHUANIA

A little strip of country along the Baltic sea formerly under the German rule, now known as Memelgebiet, a part of Lithuania, is where the work of publishing the Kingdom message has been carried on in that country during the last year. The conditions in the country are far worse than they were a year ago. Trade with Germany has practically ceased, and the exports to England have also been greatly restricted. The people generally have little or no money. Conditions are exceedingly bad. The distribution of the Kingdom message has been limited during the year to 7,978 books and booklets. Amongst other things, the local manager reports:

Not only financial conditions, but the political situation also, has made the work of witnessing in Memelgebiet very difficult. Many people, German at heart, are extreme "Hitlerites", showing the same hatred of the truth as the Nazis in Germany, although as some are learning of the real conditions in Germany they are altering their attitude towards the Kingdom message.

During the past twelve months 10,382 pieces of literature have been spread in this district. This figure includes odd numbers of *The Golden Age*, which journal has, in addition, 709 regular subscribers.

The clergy have been active, as usual, in causing legal action to be taken against Jehovah's witnesses. Adopting methods similar to those of their "brethren" in other lands, they get the police to make arrests and then seem to vanish from the picture. Three cases have been proceeded with, and each has been decided in our favor. One case was taken by us to the

highest court, where it was proved that a false charge had been made, but as this last court did not wish to give a verdict against that of the lower court the matter was delayed so that, under the "statute of limitations", it could be quietly dropped.

One of Jehovah's witnesses in another part of Lithuania was arrested for distributing our literature and was told by the police that he would surely get a twelve years' sentence. The case was eventually dismissed, however, and the brother demanded the return of the literature which had been commandeered by the police and which, he pointed out, was not his property. After some trouble the literature was handed over on the promise that it would be given to the rightful owners. This promise was carried out, the brother contending that the rightful owners were the people of good will desiring to be informed concerning Jehovah and his kingdom.

Apart from the friends in Memelgebiet, very few of those in Lithuania who have come to a knowledge of the truth seem to realize its purpose. Some of these have returned from America, and conversation with them soon discloses the fact that they have been "nourished" by "elective elders" and have little or no conception of the fact that Jehovah's witnesses are "a people for a purpose".

#### LUXEMBURG

A small territory is that of Luxemburg, controlled by politicians and the Catholic hierarchy. It is under the jurisdiction of the Central European office. During the year the brethren have put forth a strenuous effort there, and under very adverse conditions, to publish the message of the Kingdom. There have been only 15 workers in the field, and, by the Lord's grace, they have placed books and booklets to the number of 3,164.

It is a Catholic country, and therefore action is greatly hindered and the brethren often are arrested, fined and thrown into prison. Nevertheless, they are very courageous and rejoice to have a share in every special campaign. Two auxiliary pioneers were active, but had to cease their work. The police searched for a German pioneer, but he could get across the boundary and continue working in another country. A regional service convention took place at Luxemburg, which was attended by 100 brethren and friends.

#### MEXICO

For many centuries the Roman Catholic hierarchy absolutely dominated in Mexico. In more recent years

the people have thrown off this shackle to a large degree; yet the subtle influence of these religionists is great. As Jehovah's witnesses go forth to make publication of the Kingdom message, this enemy of dark hue, by subtle means, creates the impression amongst the official element that Jehovah's witnesses are merely another religion, and thus brings persecution upon those who are faithful to the Lord. Regardless of these handicaps, the work in Mexico during the ensuing year has progressed. The total number of books and booklets placed in the hands of the people and bearing the Kingdom message is, to wit, 133,010. From the branch manager's report the following is extracted:

It has been a blessed year and the results have gone away beyond our expectations, but not beyond our desires and the needs of the country, for there is yet much work to be done, and, by the Lord's grace, we will do it, no matter how hard Satan tries to hinder in all possible manner. The convention just had, practically at the close of the fiscal year, has proved a great stimulus to the friends, all of whom feel ready, with renewed zeal, to continue doing their part this new year, and to prove our confidence in the Lord's blessings to our efforts this fiscal year we are increasing our booklet quota to 150,000.

Endeavoring to improve the previous year's record, early in 1933-34 fiscal year we fixed the following quota: Workers, 150; testimonies, 360,000; hours worked, 48,000; obtainers, 40,000; books, 24,000; booklets, 60,000. The results are as follows:

#### Results, 1933-1934

Average number of workers (60 pioneers; 12 auxiliaries)	126
Total number of testimonies given	517,115
Total number of hours worked	82,654
Total number of obtainers	96,014
Total number of books placed	26,123
Total number of booklets placed	106,887
Total number of literature placed	133,010

Really, the results are greater, but it is next to impossible to make some friends report regularly. We do not include in this list Bibles, neither free literature.

It can be noticed that all figures were left behind, except the one of workers expected to engage, though in one month we had as high as 171 giving the testimony. Though difficult

to get the reports on time, the friends are somewhat improving in this respect. It is worth while noticing that the entire reported output during the fiscal year reported is over 100 percent better than the previous year. The output reported for 1932-1933 was 53,444 pieces, and it was a record year.

#### Conventions, Radio, Transcriptions

We had two conventions this year, one in Veracruz, and the other in Mexico city. Both resulted in great encouragement and in record-breaking placements and testimonies given. At the last convention we had 75 workers, who in five mornings placed 3,000 booklets. We were sorry not to have some brethren from the States to encourage the friends as in 1932 convention, but, notwithstanding, there was a great joy for all and everything worked together for good and to the glory of Jehovah. By means of committees all the different activities were carried on smoothly. The spirit of cooperation was noticeable and commented upon. At the meetings, mostly late articles of the *Tower* were discussed. At both conventions resolutions were passed to the effect of pledging once more full cooperation with the visible organization to the glory of Jehovah.

A great deal of difficulty has attended the radio question, but, in spite of all, we have used radio constantly this fiscal year, and at present we are broadcasting every day, using a small station (XECW). The total of radio hours was 124. Five stations were used.

The transcription machines offer good opportunities, but the only difficulty is the question of transportation. We have kept two of them busy, and expect to put two more to work. We were expecting to have one machine going constantly. The approximate number of times the machines were used during the last six months was 93, and the attendance about 2,607. One of the experiences had by the brethren in charge of one of the transcription machines was his arrest, together with two other brethren, charged with violating the religious laws of Mexico. All night they were under arrest, but sleeping soundly, trusting in the Lord and glad that some cents were saved for lodging. A few records were put on the next day before the authorities, and, after proving that this was no "religion", the charges were dismissed. That night, after returning from work at a near-by town, they were sent word by what we may call the "maylor" encouraging them to put on some records, as the message was important for the people to hear.

#### NORTHERN EUROPEAN OFFICE

The Society's Northern European branch office maintained at Copenhagen exercises immediate super-

vision over the publication of the Kingdom message in the following countries, to wit: Denmark, Estonia, Finland, Iceland, Latvia, Lithuania, Norway, Sweden. From this office is given the total distribution of books and booklets throughout the above territory, but these figures are not to be considered in reaching the grand total, since they are also set forth in the respective countries above named.

That God's people may get a general view of the work carried on in the jurisdiction above mentioned, the following extracts are here set out from the local manager's report:

In the year just ended there has been a greater measure of peace from the outside allowed us by the authorities in the four old countries. True, in Denmark two pioneers were put in prison for a couple of nights at the instance of the clergy, but the police were very kind as they performed, to them, an unpleasant duty. Thereafter we took immediate action by supplying every worker with identity certificates signed and sealed by the Society. These stated in unequivocal terms that our brethren were voluntary colaborgers, earning nothing at all, and that by the judgment of the Danish Supreme Court they had full and perfect liberty to do this work both on weekdays and on Sundays. On several occasions afterwards our workers were stopped by the police, but when they read the certificates courteous apology was made and they were allowed to carry on. In Norway the cases against us were settled out of court, as reported to you, and the work there also goes forward without let or hindrance. Only in the Baltic States is there trouble, for in each there is a dictator, and these men are frightened to death of communism, so that when the clergy make false charges the authorities act. In Estonia, purely as a result of clerical action, we were shut off the air, for the station now belongs to the government; in Latvia our Latvian Society, which we had such difficulty in getting registered, was closed and our stock of books as well as our cash (5 cents!) was confiscated. Think of a clergyman's being appointed liquidator! It was indeed galling, and one can picture Gog enjoying it; but they laugh best who laugh last. In Lithuania we are now registered and hope to get more water on the wheel shortly. It is the only country which shows a decrease, for all others, including Latvia, went forward with a swing.

1933-34 has indeed been a wonderful year, in that in Northern Europe we had no less than four records to our credit. They occurred in the four chief testimony periods. The first

was in October, The Kingdom Proclamation Period. Then we had the record number of 1,809 brethren out, and these used 21,679 hours, gave 136,785 testimonies, and placed 124,319 pieces of literature. Followed "Dividing the People" Period, in January, when 2,071 were out and placed 140,769. Two records! Soon, however, came a third, when, in the March Thanksgiving Period, 2,428 went out, used 30,112 hours, gave 233,453 testimonies, and placed 201,082 pieces of literature. Even a one-time Scot could not refrain from a cable after that! Where did these extra 619 brethren over our October record come from? Surely many, if not most of them, were the 'millions now living who will never die', or Jonadab class. In that one period we spread as many as Northern Europe used to do in a year. Then came "The Nations' Hope" Testimony Period, and even in the warm month of July we beat our two earlier records of October and January, though it did not come up to the March effort. We had 2,102 out, used 27,407 hours, gave 202,014 testimonies, and spread 173,719. In other words, in four nine-day periods we spread 639,889.

During the year our testimonies jumped from 1,853,292 last year to 2,296,745, our hours went up to 463,016, and the weekly number out went from 1,086 to 1,133. There were placed 87,232 books and 1,322,594 booklets; a grand total of 1,409,826. We are down on books by 16,583, but up on booklets by 444,414. Naturally we should have liked to have more bound books too, but when so many booklet campaigns were had we were glad to be with our brethren everywhere in delivering these pointed and timely messages to the people, realizing it was Jehovah's due time for them to go out. Our mark was set at 1,200 out each week, and we managed 1,133, at 2,250,000 testimonies and reached 2,296,745, at 500,000 hours, and we managed 463,016. It pays well to aim high enough.

In the four old countries the regional service directors have done good work, and in Norway, where there is only one, three journeys have been made by Swedish ones to good advantage. Now, additionally, there come many inquiries as to meetings for the Jonadab friends, who are springing up all over, so there is still more work for them, unless possibly we can secure good records in the Northern languages at moderate rates. English-speaking countries are richly blessed in this respect.

The ranks of our pioneers and auxiliaries were increased by 29, for there were 242 out each week, on average; and these placed 598,716, as against 445,614 last year. In Norway, Finland and part of Sweden the ways are long and the houses few and far between, but many hardships and difficulties are cheerfully endured that the Kingdom fruits may be borne forth to others. One brother in Norway goes on a cycle in summer, with a tent and books on the carrier, and on one occasion as he lay in his tent he was stoned by a band of hooligans. How-

ever, he was not harmed. In winter he goes on skis. Two Finnish sisters are helping in Estonia, where accommodation in the country is very poor, and one of them was in hospital several weeks with typhus fever; but still they go on. Just as the Devil's crowd pushed us off the radio in Estonia, an English pioneer was able to go around giving lectures in Estonian; so as one method is closed to us another opens up and the message goes out. Another young English pioneer has also done very well there and is spreading many books.

On the northwestern coast of Norway the motorboat "Ester" continues with her crew of two to give a good account of herself. Close on 10,000 pieces were spread in what is practically virgin territory, an increase of over 40 percent on last year's results.

*Bulletins*, based upon the American ones, go out regularly in all countries, and so the work goes forward in a uniform manner everywhere. They are the field orders of the Lord's army this side the veil. Those who most closely follow the directions achieve the best results. In every country the testimony cards are used, and these keep the presentation of the message uniform and at the same time conserve the strength of the workers, a very important consideration. True it is that when a district has been covered several times, many people, when they see the card, refuse to look at it at all, but, so far, at all events, the balance is on the right side. That the Devil's organization sometimes copies our method says a deal for it.

*The Golden Age* last year reached 53,000 subscriptions, apart from copies spread singly, but if we take into account that in Finland we now have edition A on the first of the month and edition B on the 15th, we have virtually an increase of 8,500. The B edition was begun only this year. We appreciate very much the matter in the mother paper which is suitable for our issues, even though most articles must be cut down, because three of our four editions are 16-page ones. That article on "Persecution in Germany" was, for example, very useful for us, and our July edition, which contained a five-page cut-down, was printed on 174,000 copies. Without doubt that will have opened the eyes of all right-thinking people, who read the article, to the inherent rottenness of Nazism, which is of the Devil, devilish. In the larger towns, when invitations are sent out to *Golden Age* readers to attend a series of lectures, the result is always that some of the Jonadab class get up into the chariot. It is thus a very effective Kingdom agent, and its visits are a constant reminder to the people of those things which shall shortly come to pass. Time and again it has been instrumental in placing sets of the books, so that work with the magazine also helps forward the spread of the books and booklets.

In some companies the Devil has sought to cause trouble

through "elective elders" who talk about the "God-given rights of the church" and of the "right of the church to determine its own matters". That means, of course, that such "elective elders" want matters to go after their wishes. In the final analysis, these brethren suffer from an overweening sense of their own importance. They live away back 'in the good old days' of Brother Russell and are selfishness epitomized. Instead of serving Jehovah according to the organization method, they serve their own belles. They refuse instruction and, like certain ones of old, are 'willingly ignorant' concerning God's Word. And yet, Brother Rutherford, how they could help themselves by reading and assimilating that fine article on "His Organization", in the December 1 (1933) *Watchtower*. At bottom, the troubles that so arise are really traceable to this: that many who should know better do not clearly discern the two organizations and do not appreciate the fact that Christ is at the temple for judgment and is judging his people now. So far I am glad to say the work is not affected, though that is, of course, the Devil's objective. However, we know that no opposition whatsoever can interfere with the accomplishment of Jehovah's purposes. His chariot goes grandly forward.

#### NORWAY

The work in Norway, by the Lord's grace, has progressed during the fiscal year, the Kingdom message being published in books and booklets to the number of 282,623. A country where the workers must proceed under difficulties, Jehovah's witnesses gave a good account of themselves in the year that has just closed. The local manager, amongst other things, says:

Also this year has been wonderful. We appreciate the great privilege to work in Jehovah's organization and to vindicate his name. We thank Jehovah for giving us more and more light. The articles in *The Watchtower* have been wonderful. It was a great joy to understand "the ten plagues" in the article "His Name", "His Covenants," and "Laborers' Wages".

Books Two and Three of *Vindication* and *Preservation* now at hand. We have especially been longing for the two *Vindication* books to understand the glorious light therein, and we are thankful for getting the books in our language.

In Norway the situation has been just about the same as last year: a hard economic pressure and the same difficulties as over the whole earth. Satan and his agents have done their best to disturb the active friends, but has not succeeded.

Also in Norway we begin to see the Jonadab class. They

participate with joy in the witness work. This encourages Jehovah's witnesses to go on, as also the result shows: 78 percent more literature sent out than last year, in spite of the long ways in the fjords and over the high mountains in the cold and stormy winters.

In all, we have sent 282,623 books and booklets. It is 137,917 more than last year. Not so many books as last year, but if we are counting 6 booklets as one book, it still will be 112,891 more than last year. We have sent out 2,465 circulars and letters, 5,460 *Bulletins*. Twelve companies are organized for service, and 207 friends participated in the witness work; 50 more than last year. Average number each week, 108. Twenty-eight pioneers and auxiliaries have been out, 8 more than last year.

*The Golden Age* has 4,847 subscribers; 19,870 copies distributed; of these, 12,000 of the protest against Hitler's persecution of Jehovah's witnesses. The magazine is still going forward, doing very good work, breaking the ground.

The motorboat "Ester" has still only two brethren. It seems best not to be more, on account of the field. They are now in north Norway. The people there are more friendly, but many of them very poor. Last winter "Ester" was on the west coast and worked on the islands and in the fjords, where the people are very clergy-ridden, in great darkness. The intolerant "dark men" sent the police after the brethren four or five times, and they had to move from place to place.

The largest companies are very often, on Sundays, driving in buses and motor lorries to different places about 30-60 miles away. It is a great joy to partake in such attacks against Satan's barricades.

Our year convention was a great feast. We had two days in the field. 176 friends went out, giving 3,707 testimonies, distributing 136 books and 2,199 booklets; total, 2,335. The friends came from nearly all parts of the country; not so many as last year from Bergen, as a convention would be there a fortnight later for the friends on the west coast, who could not afford the expensive journey to Oslo.

#### PALESTINE

Not much has been done during the year in Palestine. This is not contrary to expectations. Few people within the limits of that country seem to have any interest in God's kingdom. There are too many religionists there, however, the witness has been given during the year, and the Kingdom message published to the number of 737 books and booklets placed in the hands of the people. The Devil has builded his or-

ganization strong in that land, where once the Lord trod, but in due time the Lord will clear out the wicked organization completely.

#### PHILIPPINE ISLANDS

The publication of the Kingdom message continues throughout the Philippine Islands, being directed from the Society's branch office at Manila. During the fiscal year books and booklets were placed in the hands of the people in the Philippines to the number of 23,405. More literature is being printed in the dialect of the natives, and the distribution has taken on a wider scope.

#### POLAND

For centuries the Catholic element has dominated Poland commercially, politically and religiously. They have concluded that they own the country and the people. Claiming to represent God, they always have been actively representing the Devil. They have never let up in their persecution of God's faithful witnesses in that land. These faithful ones, however, have not been deterred in their efforts to publish the message of the Kingdom, but have, under adverse conditions, gone forward in the work. During the year books and booklets were placed in the hands of the people to the number of 268,296. The local manager reports some interesting facts, which are set out as follows:

During recent years the number of participants in the Memorial continually increased, so that in 1933 3,076 participated in the Memorial. This year we drew the attention of the brethren in no uncertain way to the fact that only those who have sworn to be faithful to the Lord in his vineyard have the right to partake of the Memorial emblems. As a result, only 2,519 brethren came to the Memorial. At the same time the brethren all over the country manifested a greater zeal. Thus, during the spring service campaign, 40 percent of the brethren engaged in the work, while last year the percentage had been 21 percent only. In the previous year the highest number of workers was 700. This year on certain occasions more than 1,000 workers stood in the field.

It is very interesting to compare the result of the past year with that of the previous year:

	1932-33	1933-34
Hours	91,645	121,854
Testimonies	676,741	917,256
Bound books distributed	6,080	9,555
Booklets distributed	110,236	127,489
Bibles distributed	1,113	1,614
<i>Golden Age</i> copies distributed	101,749	122,719

There was forwarded from the office:

Books and booklets	99,857	131,252
Bibles	1,288	1,271
Bound books in all languages	5,845	9,226
Booklets in all languages	94,012	122,026

According to languages, we forwarded:

Polish literature	64,776	92,540
German literature	16,063	19,047
Ukrainian literature	14,820	15,153
Russian literature	3,060	3,569
<i>Golden Age</i> copies, Polish	160,651	187,881
<i>Golden Age</i> copies, German	21,374	18,000
Leaflets distributed	35,530	188,832
Regional service directors employed	3	2
These held meetings for the brethren	519	524
Total of brethren attending these meetings	13,684	16,229
The regional service directors held public lectures to the number of	172	55
Total number of people attending these lectures	23,469	6,494
Pieces of mail received	9,963	11,391
Pieces of mail dispatched	9,243	8,001

We were very pleased to see the great importance of the Service Periods for the people of the Lord. Not only are they important because they bring greater joy to God's people, but also because the result of the months in which there has been a service period was double that of other months. Thus the months in which there is no special campaign are lean months, in which Jehovah's witnesses have less joy.

As regards the fight against the enemy organization, the persecutions on the part of the clergy have grown much more serious. They are now resorting to all the cunning means they can find to use against us, and, seeing that they have been beaten everywhere, they have now completely ceased to fight with the sword of the spirit and have taken the literal sword into their hands. Thus we see the clergy raving in despair and

resorting to their last dreadful means in inciting the people to attack the Lord's people. Therefore the cases are increasing where brethren are maltreated by the clergy and their hordes. It even happens that the brethren are stopped from meeting together, so as to discourage them.

However, the brethren are not in the least intimidated by these furious attacks on the part of the clergy, and in the very places where the opposition is greatest it is noticed that thereupon the zeal of the brethren increases much. Thus we see that the Lord particularly blesses the faithful ones. We can see, too, how the people divide themselves into two classes, exactly as Brother Rutherford shows in the booklet *Dividing the People*.

It is interesting to note that sometimes even men holding higher positions in the government, when given an explanation of the truth, accept it. Thus we were thrilled when, for instance, the state attorney of the court of appeal of Thorn not only demanded the acquittal of a brother, against whom the clergy had brought a charge of blasphemy against God in distributing our Biblical literature, but stated that the witnesses of Jehovah of our time take exactly the same stand as did the first Christians: Misrepresented and persecuted, they stand for the highest ideals in a corrupt and falling world organization. The brother was, of course, acquitted. The state attorney of the court of appeal of Posen, as well, did not prosecute a brother, in spite of the fact that the accusation charged him with calling the Roman clergy "Satan's organization". The state attorney in his speech referred, among other things, to the papal court of Alexander VI with his debauched sons and daughters whence a dreadful immorality spread throughout "Christendom" where truly the spirit of a satanic organization was manifest. He then compared this corruption and immorality with the activity of Jehovah's witnesses about whom nothing can be said except that, faithful to their ideals, they put forth their best efforts to serve Jehovah. It is pleasing to see how such people are able to reach proper conclusions regarding the truth of the Bible and the work of Jehovah's witnesses. Such things cause the clergy class to rage, seeing that neither through the government nor through the courts can they accomplish that which they intend to do, namely, shut the mouths of Jehovah's witnesses and stop them. That the brethren may be discouraged they resort to acts of violence against them, but in vain.

It is also very interesting to note that those who slander and attack the truth and the witnesses thereof flee when they are called upon to account for their action. Thus a certain Dr. Skrudlik wrote several booklets against Jehovah's witnesses, denouncing them as communists, bolshevists and antichrist. When we took legal action against this "doctor of medicine"

and philosophy", he became very ill and asked the court to postpone the case. He repeated this demand a second, and a third time, and it is said that because of serious illness he is not able to appear in court.

Those who oppose and persecute the Lord's people will not succeed. Thus there was a certain judge who held several brothers in prison without any reason or excuse, and he assured these that he would not rest until he would have destroyed Jehovah's witnesses in Poland. Two years ago, or even one year ago, this man believed he was near his goal. This year, however, he is no more among the living, while Jehovah's witnesses are more active than ever.

#### RUMANIA

This is another country wherein the religionists, and particularly the Roman Catholic force, predominate. Several years ago the "man of sin" class, acting as the Devil's special representative, temporarily wrecked the work in Rumania, and it has been under difficult conditions that it has been revived. The brethren have during the year attempted to go on with the witness work. The enemy has caused the arrest and prosecution of 107 of the brethren. From the local manager's report the following is taken:

Some of the judges seem to have a better sense of justice than in other countries, for all these prosecutions against us were eventually discontinued. In many cases the judges disagreed among themselves, some being opposed to the truth, while others took their stand on Jehovah's side and in favor of the truth.

The rather great distances and the relatively bad means of communication in this country made it difficult to create an organization functioning satisfactorily. Then, too, most of the brethren are very poor materially and some of them are still illiterate. However, from the office we did what we could, and the Lord has blessed our efforts.

There were 12,649 more hours spent in the service, and in the distribution of books and booklets there is an increase of 43,156 copies. On an average there were 613 company workers and 6 pioneers, and these placed, in 43,079 hours, 113,594 books and booklets. In addition, 375 Bibles and "Testaments" were sold.

Rumania has a total of 113,594 books and booklets. The zealous faithful ones in Rumania are still pushing forward and joyfully proclaiming the message of

the Kingdom. The Lord will have his witnesses in every place according to his will, and notice shall be served upon the people, that those of good will may have an opportunity to now take their stand on the side of Jehovah and his kingdom.

#### SAAR BASIN

The Saar Basin is another territory put in the patchwork map of Europe since the World War. It lies immediately between France and Germany, and has a population of approximately 800,000 persons, the majority of whom are Catholics. The Hierarchy controls them, but there are some good, honest Catholics amongst them who desire to know the truth. It is under the protectorate of the League of Nations; therefore under the direct control of the "image of the beast". In spite of this darkness and great opposition from the enemy, Jehovah's witnesses have joyfully gone into the fight and published the message of God's kingdom. There are only four companies of consecrated ones in the Saar Basin, aggregating 189 persons. Of these, 137 participated in the service, and were joined by 48 Jonadabs. During the year they placed books and booklets to the number of, to wit, 42,868. In addition thereto, Bibles to the number of 38 were placed in the hands of the people, and subscriptions for *The Golden Age* taken to the number of 111. The work has recently begun in that country, and it is progressing. The following facts from the local manager's report will be read with interest:

Although the government has granted the liberty to work on Sundays as well, the enemy has now for some time been putting forth his greatest efforts with a view to making this impossible. In fact, during recent months we have met with a special opposition on the part of the police, when working on Sundays, and this is due to the influence of the clergy. Thus one sister was prosecuted because of "disturbing the Sunday rest". In spite of the fact that the attention of the court was drawn to a circular letter issued by the government, whereby the police were instructed not to interfere with the work of Jehovah's

witnesses, the sister was fined. It is, however, encouraging to see that the brethren know their divine commission and go forward fearlessly in spite of the many difficulties which they encounter. We may say that the zeal and the energy of the brethren have increased in the same proportion as the difficulties.

Here there are also quite a number of Jonadabs who attend our meetings and participate regularly in the service from house to house. One often admires the firmness with which they defend the cause of the Lord although it is only recently that they have come in contact with the truth.

The Service Periods have witnessed a steadily increasing number of workers, which proves that these special periods of witnessing are a great incentive for the brethren. These were times of joy, unity and gratitude towards Jehovah. In spite of many difficulties, the brethren took part in these special campaigns with great energy, and the results were accordingly.

The testimony cards which have recently been introduced in the service work have proved very advantageous, especially because the people have now taken a firm stand either for or against the truth. By this means a brief and uniform testimony is given and the people quickly decide whether they want to have something or not. We were thus enabled to reach more people during a given period of time.

We are much pleased that, with the beginning of the new year, we may start the work with the electrical transcription machines, and we thank the Lord for thus opening up for us new opportunities of service.

#### SPAIN

Jehovah God continues to show his loving-kindness to Spain, which has long been priest-ridden but is now emerging from the darkness. During the past year the output of the literature giving expression to God's purpose almost doubles that of the previous year. The workers are small in number, but zealous in the Lord. Reporting on conditions, the local manager at Madrid says:

During this report year the amount of literature placed in the hands of the people has been 2,813 books and 81,906 booklets, making a total of 84,719, as against 43,003 during the previous year and 12,713 in the year prior thereto. As before, the increase has been chiefly in the booklets, but it is very evident that the message in this form is doing a great work, as is seen from correspondence which comes in to this office. Only a few months ago a friar wrote to us as follows: "I would very much like to free myself from the situation in which I

find myself . . . I am obliged to continue in this prison . . . I am one of the many prisoners who, as Judge Rutherford so well points out, still find themselves in 'Christendom', and I am trusting in the mercy of the Lord to grant me my liberty in order to become a real witness of Jehovah.' He has obtained all our literature and is a subscriber for *The Watchtower*. Maybe he will become a "Jonadab", if not a Jw, one of those days!

There are few service workers in Spain, but the zeal and faithfulness of those who have risen to their privilege has been a constant joy and encouragement. Necessarily, the bulk of the witnessing is done by the pioneers. Only one of these is a Spaniard; and in spite of the difficulty of working in a foreign country, these have all been able to get along well with the aid of the printed testimony card. In fact, they do even better than such of us as can speak the language. The highest report received from any pioneer was for 1,003 booklets and 259 copies of *Luz y Verdad*, placed in 88½ hours' work during a fortnight.

At the moment of writing this, Spain is once again in the throes of a revolutionary general strike. Nevertheless, a young German sister, who had arrived only a day earlier, and without any knowledge of the language, started out on the first day of the strike for her first time in the pioneer work and placed 1 book, 49 booklets, and 10 copies of *Luz y Verdad* in eight hours. One can truly say, "Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings . . .," for the message is the Lord's and it is His doing.

When, in the early part of the year, some pioneers were forced to leave France and came here, this suddenly doubled our force, bringing up the number to twelve, and, consequently, we have had difficulty in keeping up with the demand for literature. We have also received numerous further applications from brethren desirous of pioneering in Spain, and we are doing everything possible to accommodate a good number of them as soon as possible.

In conclusion, I would like to add a word of appreciation and gratitude to Jehovah for the privilege of attending the London convention. I am quite confident in saying that never before have I derived so much benefit from a convention as this time. Once upon a time we used to return from a convention with some "beautiful thoughts", but now the Lord's people gather for the purpose of equipping themselves for the battle; to receive instructions from Jehovah's visible organization. It is so clear now that the Lord is in his temple, and we can see the Kingdom principles being applied with ever greater force. I am more convinced than ever that a recognition of the Lord's organization, which implies absolute obe-

dience, loyalty and love, which is the perfect expression of unselfishness, hence the complete elimination of self and of personalities, together with a determination to do the Lord's will and be pleasing to him notwithstanding what others may say or think, is of paramount importance now. I do not think I have ever felt the Lord's interest and intervention in our affairs as clearly as at present.

I have often refrained from expressing my great appreciation of you, because it might appear like flattery. On the one hand, you would not wish that; and on the other, I will not curry favor from any man in order to serve Jehovah. But I do want to tell you how much I love you because of the way in which you are so faithfully serving the Lord, and that every time I see you and the better I get to know you, the more I love you. It is so downright wicked of some to be slandering you and thus upsetting some of the brethren. Your own example and that of those who surround you are the greatest stimulus I have received at this convention to press on and serve the Lord with all my might.

#### SWEDEN

Jehovah has blessed his people in Sweden during the fiscal year. There has been a decided increase in the proclamation of the message. Books and booklets to the number of 458,893 have been placed in the hands of the people. The brethren at the Bethel headquarters and office have been manifesting great zeal and activity in the work during the year. The report from the local headquarters, amongst other things, says:

The most encouraging feature to my mind is the fact that the Lord is now fulfilling his prophecies about a class of men of good will coming to know the truth and taking their stand upon the side of Jehovah and taking part in testifying to his name and kingdom. This "Jonadab class" is being manifest in our country now in a way we could not think of only a year ago. The numbers of workers reporting during the international Service Periods clearly establish this fact: In the October (1933) Kingdom Period, 521; in the "Dividing the People" Period, January, 1934, the number was 740; and "Thanksgiving Period", March, 1934, we reached a peak, 915 workers. Then, in the July "Nations' Hope" Period, it is true that the figure dropped to 735, but this corresponds to the number of 574 during the July Period in 1933, and never before 1934 have we had more than 625. The zeal of the Jonadab friends,

and their joy, is a real encouragement, and some who claim to be of the witness company would do well to copy the zeal these are manifesting. There are even whole-time workers among this Jonadab class. The fact that the number of subscribers for *The Watchtower* has increased from 1,600 to 1,808 (by far the biggest increase we have ever had for the *Tower*) also shows that the presentations of the truth given therein are being appreciated by the Jonadab friends. And we have had to increase our editions of the *Bulletin* by nearly 100 percent lately. As a result of this increased number of workers we have been able to testify to 698,335 people, as against 546,764 last year.

Consequently the number of books, etc., placed with the people has also greatly increased. The aforementioned periods, and the many new special booklets, have, of course, contributed very largely to this result. The total number of books and booklets placed with the people is 458,893, an increase above last year's total of 150,659. There is a drop in bound books, from 41,052 to 37,466, owing partly to the poverty among those who want to look further into these truths, and partly to the fact that more time has had to be devoted to putting out the various campaign features. But this is the only drop; all the rest of our figures are up, in every department. More companies are organized for service, more workers out regularly week by week, more hours spent in the work, more pioneers, more auxiliaries, more meetings, bigger attendance, etc., and the prospects are for continued increases all along.

Our pioneers have reached an average of 49, which is just the number of companies organized for service, by the way, and they have placed 192,379 books and booklets, whereas last year an average of 44 placed 141,966. Some of them have been working along the mountain ranges in the North, making their way on foot, many times long, long distances with no roads, sometimes rowing on the lakes, in fact the only way to get to some remote villages which are perfectly isolated when there is no open water or the ice is not strong enough to carry a man. They have also been calling upon business people in the towns, and many encouraging experiences have been had during this feature of the work.

In my last annual report I mentioned that we were asking the friends to cooperate in an effort to reach some outlying parts, etc., where the message had not been previously preached by word of mouth, and this has been done to a notable degree. There have been 369 public meetings held, with an attendance of 31,064, against 265 and 22,057, respectively, last year. Our regional service directors have also had many encouraging experiences, when they have been sent to call upon isolated individuals or groups of persons who have been writing to the office for literature, and very often such a call has resulted

in a small Jonadab company's springing up and starting to tell other people about the truth.

The *Golden Age* magazine also plows the ground and prepares the minds of these Jonadabs. In the companies the method has often been used, and with great success, that an invitation is sent from the office to all *Golden Age* subscribers within a territory of a company to come to a meeting specially arranged for them during the visit of the regional service director brother. Thereafter the interested ones of those turning up have been invited to the regular meetings of the company, and quite a few have found their way to the studies and become regular workers. A goodly number of these people have also symbolized their consecration to do the will of Jehovah. Of *The Golden Age* there have been spread among the public, besides the books and booklets, a number of 80,283 loose copies, and the number of subscribers is now 23,076. Last year we had 22,179 subscribers, and spread 61,379 loose copies. An especially interesting item in connection with the *Golden Age* work was the week in August, when we specialized on the issue carrying the report about the persecutions in Germany. Of this issue alone, there were placed with the public during that one week more than 15,900 copies (and there had been many placed before), and 488 subscriptions were taken.

There would be many more interesting and encouraging items to dwell upon, but time fails me. We are looking forward now with great expectations to the Kingdom Period, starting the new fiscal year; and is it not as it should be, that when we look back upon what we have done, by the Lord's grace, or rather, upon what it has pleased Him to do through us, then we can look forward again with restrengthened faith and renewed courage and so go on to the next fight in this wonderful campaign under the great and mighty Warrior, the Prince of Peace!

This is the happy privilege of the friends in Sweden, and I rejoice to say that, with so few exceptions that they are only serving to establish the rule, the friends here are in a good spiritual condition and rejoicing in their privileges.

In closing, permit me to voice our thankfulness for all the rich spiritual food it has pleased the Lord to spread on our table and through the service of you as His faithful servant, entrusted with the work of putting into writing what He now wants us to feed upon. To him be all the glory and honor, and when we thank you we are only gratefully acknowledging his arrangement. May Jehovah himself and our Lord and King, Christ Jesus, continue to bless and keep and guide you and use you to the vindication of his holy name; and may we all be found faithful, fighting with you in his army, is my constant prayer.

## SWITZERLAND

As one views the earth in the present conditions it is more strongly impressed upon the mind that Satan, the prince of darkness, is the god of this world, who blinds the minds of the people lest the glorious light of the gospel of Jesus Christ, who is Jehovah's chief witness, should shine into their hearts. Switzerland is a beautifully situated country, and its people are quite liberal with reference to almost everything. There is a strong Catholic influence in many parts of Switzerland, however. The country is divided into 22 different counties, or cantons, and some of these cantons are almost exclusively Catholic, and there these religionists exercise a cruel influence and have the strong-arm squad carry out their wicked purpose. The people of Switzerland make much over the fact that William Tell struck a great blow for liberty, but Satan and his wicked machinations soon drew the people into an even worse net, and it would take much more than a William Tell to strike off the shackles of the Swiss people, as well as in other parts of the earth. Christ Jesus, the great Executive Officer of Jehovah, will do this work and do it completely, at Armageddon.

The Central European office is situated in Berne, Switzerland, and from there is conducted the work in many parts of central and southern Europe. The brethren who operate the office and factory are earnest and zealous and have greatly enjoyed the Lord's blessing during the past year. In addition to manufacturing books, booklets, and magazines, there have been made at this office also transcription machines and phonographs, as well as the discs or records therefor. These are made in the German language and are used throughout the land of Switzerland and some other parts of the country. There are many honest and sincere people in the land of Switzerland, a goodly number of whom are taking their stand on the side of the Lord and his kingdom and thus seeking a place

of refuge during the great storm that is rapidly approaching. From the report of the manager at Berne the following is quoted:

A member of the Berne office used his vacation to offer booklets to a few residents of the beautifully situated town of Seelisberg, on the lake of Lucerne. Immediately he was stopped by the local policeman, who arrested him and took him to the chief town of the canton. Without according him any trial he was taken to a dirty prison cell. With scanty food he was kept there a day and a night. In the evening there was a festival in that town and the brother heard in his cell some speaker proclaiming the wonderful freedom in the land of Tell. The next day, without giving him any hearing, he was taken to the place where he was born, and there they expected to take him to the poorhouse. Finally the case was examined and the canton which claims to be the cradle of free Switzerland was thus dishonored. The father of this brother, who is a locomotive engineer, as well as the brother himself have made a complaint, which is now in the courts.

Several Swiss courts have rendered some very unjust judgments recently, and they are seeking more and more to represent our activity as commercial peddling. The brethren, however, have refused to pay fines and have preferred to go to prison.

One brother, who spent a few days in jail at Berne, was in the same cell with three Chinamen. The prison keeper brought a book with pictures in an unknown language and thought that they might look at that for their entertainment. It appeared that this book, which is in the prison library, was the illustrated "Creation Drama" book in the Arabian language.

It really appears as though the authorities have given order to watch our activity more closely. The expression is often heard: "The activity of the Bible Students, Jehovah's witnesses, must be stopped." God's people in Switzerland are determined to obey God rather than men.

During the year we had 51 lawsuits, two-thirds of which were settled in our favor.

In the larger part of Switzerland, during the year, a wonderful witness was given. This small country counts 47 organized companies with an average of 800 company workers. During Thanksgiving Period 975 brethren engaged in the service. There is everywhere complete harmony, and thus with the Lord's blessing the following result was obtained: 65,374 hours (an increase above last year of 5,872 hours), 20,807 books (an increase of 555), 258,309 booklets (an increase of 3,582), 164,602 *Golden Age* copies (an increase of 50,381), and 2,026 new *Golden Age* readers. This added to what was distributed by others makes a total of 311,968.

During the winter the "Creation Drama" pictures were shown fifteen times. The meetings were well attended, particularly in Geneva, Lausanne, and Vevey. Follow-up meetings were held and great interest was shown. Quite a few Jonadabs have entered the chariot since this action with the Creation Drama pictures.

All together, 107 public meetings were held, with an attendance of 22,567. Six regional service conventions took place, with an attendance of 1,800 brethren. Two regional service directors were sent out from this office.

The climax of the year was the Basel convention and Brother Rutherford's visit in Switzerland. The time was limited, and yet the Basel convention was, without doubt, the largest and most blessed convention ever held in this country.

Friday noon 1,500 brethren were present, and the number increased until, on Sunday, nearly 3,000 friends were present. They had come from many European countries, namely, from Austria, Yugoslavia, Rumania, Poland, Germany, the Free City of Danzig, Holland, Belgium, France, Spain, and from Canada and the United States. Particularly for the German and Austrian friends, it was a sacrifice to come. Some were refused passports and yet they crossed the line; some traveled for days on bicycles, some by car, autobus and railway, and still others walked long distances in order to be at this eventful meeting of God's people. About 1,000 brethren from Germany were present, and they received a great encouragement and blessing.

Brother Rutherford spoke on the *Tower* article "Fear Them Not", and a large banner with this same text was stretched across the platform. This banner was prepared long before we knew that Brother Rutherford would use this very subject. With tears of joy in their eyes the brethren responded to the words of comfort and said: "Yes, by His grace, we want to be faithful, come what may."

#### Bethel Family

The Bethel family consists now of 70 members. All took a part in the service in their spare time and accomplished the following: 6,697 hours, 3,930 books, 25,327 booklets, 19,398 *Golden Age* copies and 75 subscriptions.

Aside from the influence exercised by the clergy in Switzerland, doubtless many persons express themselves on the side of the Lord, seeing that the day is not far distant when the influence of the clergy will be broken and those who are held in prison will find their great privilege of devoting themselves wholly to God and his kingdom.

## SYRIA

The message of God's kingdom is published to an extent in Syria. The report from that land, amongst other things, says:

With thankful heart, I wish to inform you about what little privileges of service I performed during this year in honoring Jehovah's name, beginning October 1, 1933, to September 11, 1934, and I hasten to offer you this annual report for its arrival at the beginning of next October.

Total number of pioneers	1
Total number of auxiliaries	3
Total number of company workers	15
Total number of workers	19
Total number of testimonies given	16,365
Total number of hours in service	2,794
Total number of persons obtaining literature	2,909
Total number of books placed	931
Total number of booklets placed	3,391
Total literature placed	4,322

These books and booklets are placed mostly among the Armenians. But partly some of them are placed among the Christian and Mahometan Arabs and Jews, etc.

In this opportunity I notify in behalf of the Lord's soldiers of Syria our thankfulness to the Watch Tower Society and you personally. And I pray that the Lord bless you and strengthen you, so that you may be able to give us the contemporary food more and more.

## TRINIDAD

At Port of Spain, Trinidad, the work is directed in Trinidad, Tobago, St. Vincent, Grenada, Barbados, and Antigua. The work has gone on during the year, and there has been a slight increase, notwithstanding the difficulties and opposition that have been met there. The clergy especially put forth their best endeavor to keep the people in ignorance of the truth. During the year the output of books and booklets totaled the sum of, to wit, 45,611. From the local manager's report the following is quoted:

There has been more open opposition than for some years, and this more particularly in portions of the territory where previously there had not been much activity. A brother and two sisters went to the island of Antigua, and the clergy there not only have warned the people against them from their pul-

pits, but have also entered the homes of some, strictly prohibiting their reading the literature, and destroying it. They have further disturbed meetings which were in progress, to the indignation of the public present and enjoying the lectures being delivered, in one case resulting in a more favorable place being offered for the lecture. In the island of Grenada, a clergyman in his opposition went so far as to say that Jehovah is a murderous and bloodthirsty God of the Jews, not the Father of Jesus Christ, that the "Old Testament" is not authentic and should not be used as a guide by Christians, and other things.

The transcription work is now getting under way, and since the brethren at Brooklyn have repaired the amplifiers of two out of the three machines in this territory we are getting good results; a fourth has arrived, and the fifth machine is due here in a few weeks. What with these and phonographs, we should hear of quite a large number of people getting the testimony this year now current, if only the brethren will keep record and report.

#### TURKEY

Turkey, of course, has very few people who give heed to Jehovah's word, but still there are some who desire to know about the Kingdom. There was an increase in the work in Turkey in the year just closed. The total number of placements of books and booklets was 4,420. This is a healthy increase for that country, and we rejoice with the brethren who had to do with putting these in the hands of the people, and who were thus furnished an opportunity of bearing witness to Jehovah's name.

#### YUGOSLAVIA

Yugoslavia is another piece of territory that forms a part of the patchwork map of the earth following the World War. Its king was recently assassinated, probably by those who could not use him. One brother who has been very active in the work in Yugoslavia and who represents the Society in a special way was a personal friend of the king and placed in his hands the Society's literature. The Hierarchy is making it as disagreeable as possible for the witness work in that country, and yet it is progressing. From the

local manager's report the following quotation is made:

Recently the enemy has put forth greater effort to hinder the witness work. We see how Gog uses all the tools at his disposal to do this. Formerly Gog's agents did not publicly oppose the witness work, but now they are to a great extent using their papers and periodicals to attack us, so that in several instances we deemed it necessary to defend ourselves in the courts. These suits are still pending. This course of action will, by the grace of the Lord, enable us to give a still greater public witness. Therefore, what we do not accomplish by spreading the literature is done by the adversary, and thus the people get the witness and are forced to take their stand. The people in general gladly accept the message, and often we see that through the slanderous writings of our enemies the people are more interested in the truth.

Apart from some persecution and even acts of violence on the part of the Catholic clergy and their willing servants, the workers have not met with great difficulties and opposition. Generally speaking, the authorities do not oppose the witness work, although some among them, yielding to the influence of the clergy, identify themselves as enemies of the truth. However, there have been several cases where the authorities protected the workers against the attacks of the clergy. In this country also we see clearly that it is the clergy alone that oppose the work and that the Catholic church leads the opposition. Therefore there is no reason why the Catholic hierarchy should be treated with any consideration and there is every reason why the people should be told that this system is the chief organization against Jehovah's kingdom.

During the year a total of 97,339 books and booklets were placed in the hands of the people in Yugoslavia.

#### CONCLUSION

Jehovah having purposed to inaugurate a righteous rule of the world, he is certain to do it. The day of the wicked rule is nearly at an end. God has repeatedly expressed his purpose in these words: "They shall know that I am Jehovah." He continues to bring forth cumulative evidence to this end. He uses his witnesses to sound his message to those who have a hearing ear, and within a short space of time he will give such an exhibition of his unlimited power that all creation will know that Jehovah is supreme. He

is now fulfilling his declaration to Satan: "But for this cause have I allowed thee to remain, in order to show thee my power; and in order that they may proclaim my name throughout all the earth." (Ex. 9:16, *Leeser*) The prayer of God's servants as set forth in the 83d Psalm must be and will be fully answered by Jehovah, because such is his expressed will.

The result of the witness work during the fiscal year just ending brings great satisfaction and comfort to the workers of Jehovah now on earth. Amidst all the cruel persecution of these witnesses and opposition to the Kingdom message the work of giving that testimony goes grandly forward. In previous years a large number of books have been distributed in Germany, but during the fiscal year just closing we have no record whatsoever of the number distributed in Germany. Had the usual amount of distribution taken place in Germany, the net result this year would have exceeded that of any previous year. The total number of books and booklets placed in the hands of the people during the fiscal year of 1934 was, to wit, 22,041,622; bringing the grand total of distribution since the publication of *The Harp of God*, in 1921, up to 178,895,063.

Let all who desire to see the world ruled in righteousness give thanks to Jehovah and to his glorious King. "In his name shall the nations hope"; and the blessing of the Lord upon his witness work during the year has increased the hope of those whose hearts are set upon the Kingdom. Their joy finds expression in the words of the psalmist: "This is the Lord's doing; it is marvellous in our eyes. This is the day which the Lord hath made; we will rejoice and be glad in it." (Ps. 118:23, 24) The evidence is conclusive that the day of deliverance draws near. The day of the "battle of that great day of God Almighty" will complete that deliverance. Somewhat

fatigued, but with a burning zeal peculiar to the Lord's house, the anointed of Jehovah, by his grace and in his strength and the strength of the King, will continue to vigorously press on, shouting as we go the battle cry, 'FOR JEHOVAH AND FOR HIS VINDICATOR!'

Joyfully submitted,



President

#### **REPORT OF ANNUAL MEETING**

The law and the by-laws of the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society require the holding of an annual meeting on the 31st of October each year. Pursuant to the same and to notice duly published according to law the annual meeting was convened in Pittsburgh, N. S., Allegheny County, Pa., on the 31st day of October, 1934, at 10 o'clock a.m. In the absence of the president, the vice-president, C. A. Wise, presided. The meeting was opened with prayer. C. H. Stewart served in the capacity of secretary pro tem. The purpose of the meeting was stated, and, there being nothing except the routine business to attend to, and there being no one to elect as officers, all the voting upon matters that came before the annual meeting was done *viva voce*. On motion duly put and carried it was ordered that the report of the president relating to the work of the Society during the fiscal year be published in the usual form. Motion unanimously carried. On motion duly put and carried the meeting then stood adjourned.

## YEAR TEXT

*"For Jehovah and for Gideon."*  
—*Judg. 7:18, A.R.V.*

JEHOVAH visited his covenant people in Israel at a time when they were threatened with destruction at the hand of the enemy. Jehovah now visits his covenant people on earth at the time when the enemy seeks the destruction of God's remnant people to whom has been committed the testimony of Jesus Christ. Jehovah caused Gideon and other faithful men to play their respective parts in a prophetic picture. Now Jehovah reveals to his remnant the meaning of that prophetic picture, disclosing to them that the record thereof was made for the aid, comfort and assurance and hope of the remnant.—Rom. 15:4.

God furnished Gideon and his men with the evidence that he was backing them up; and hence the remnant go forward with courage and confidence. Some of you may wonder why the Lord permits his faithful witnesses to be hounded and oppressed by the wicked enemy. Bear in mind that the faithful must prove their integrity toward God in order that they may have a part in the vindication of his name. Without strong opposition and persecution at the hand of the enemy the remnant would have no opportunity

of proving their faithfulness in maintaining their integrity. It must be expected that the year that lies before us will be a very strenuous one. There is no reason to expect that the enemy will relent. There is no reason why the faithful remnant should slack their hands in the performance of their duty. Let the fight go on.

The text for the year is an appropriate one, not only for this year, but from this time forward until Armageddon is fought and the victory won. The Greater Gideon is in command, and backing him up with absolute and almighty power is Jehovah, the Most High God. Now the enemy shall be forced out and destroyed and the faithful shall be safe. (Deut. 33: 26-28) With unfaltering courage and with abounding joy the remnant will now push forward, shouting as they go: "For Jehovah and for His Vindicator."

# Daily Texts and Comments

The comments following the daily texts are taken from *The Watchtower* (W).

**C A L E N D A R\***

**Jehovah's Year of Ransom 1903**

	<b>Lightday</b>	<b>Heavenday</b>	<b>Earthday</b>	<b>Starday</b>	<b>Lifeday</b>	<b>Mansday</b>	<b>Godsday</b>		<b>Lightday</b>	<b>Heavenday</b>	<b>Earthday</b>	<b>Starday</b>	<b>Lifeday</b>	<b>Mansday</b>	<b>Godsday</b>		
	*	*	*	*	*	*	*		*	*	*						
<b>Redemption</b>	*	*	*	*	1	2	3		<b>King</b>						1		
<b>First Month</b>	4	5	6	7	8	9	10		<b>Seventh Month</b>	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	
<b>(Ex 12.2)</b>	11	12	13	14	15	16	17			9	10	11	12	13	14	15	
	18	19	20	21	22	23	24			16	17	18	19	20	21	22	
	25	26	27	28	29					23	24	25	26	27	28	29	
										30							
<b>Life</b>						1	2		<b>Peace</b>		1	2	3	4	5	6	
<b>Second Month</b>	3	4	5	6	7	8	9		<b>Eighth Month</b>	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	
	10	11	12	13	14	15	16			14	15	16	17	18	19	20	
	17	18	19	20	21	22	23			21	22	23	24	25	26	27	
	24	25	26	27	28	29	30			28	29	30					
<b>Visitment</b>	1	2	3	4	5	6	7		<b>Order</b>		1	2	3	4			
<b>Third Month</b>	8	9	10	11	12	13	14		<b>Ninth Month</b>	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	
	15	16	17	18	19	20	21			12	13	14	15	16	17	18	
	22	23	24	25	26	27	28			19	20	21	22	23	24	25	
	29									26	27	28	29				
<b>Freedom</b>	1	2	3	4	5	6			<b>Logos</b>		1	2	3				
<b>Fourth Month</b>	7	8	9	10	11	12	13		<b>Tenth Month</b>	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	
	14	15	16	17	18	19	20			11	12	13	14	15	16	17	
	21	22	23	24	25	26	27			18	19	20	21	22	23	24	
	28	29	30							25	26	27	28	29	30		
<b>Vindication</b>			1	2	3	4			<b>Jehovah</b>								
<b>Fifth Month</b>	5	6	7	8	9	10	11		<b>Eleventh Month</b>	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	
	12	13	14	15	16	17	18			9	10	11	12	13	14	15	
	19	20	21	22	23	24	25			16	17	18	19	20	21	22	
	26	27	28	29	30					23	24	25	26	27	28	29	
<b>Hope</b>				1	2				<b>Temple</b>	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	
<b>Sixth Month</b>	3	4	5	6	7	8	9		<b>Twelfth Month</b>	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	
	10	11	12	13	14	15	16			15	16	17	18	19	20	21	
	17	18	19	20	21	22	23			22	23	24	25	26	*		
	24	25	26	27	28	29				29	30					27	28

\* A series of articles in explanation will appear in **The Golden Age**. Watch for them.

## January 1

(138)

*Blessed be the name of Jehovah from this time forth  
and for evermore.—Ps. 113: 2, A.R.V.*

Jehovah's name was once exalted by all intelligent creatures. All knew and delighted in his illustrious fame and honorable reputation. All knew that Jehovah was and is the source of life and that he is the unselfish Giver of every good and perfect gift. But now for centuries the name of Jehovah has been reproached, dishonored and made infamous by Satan and his host of wicked angels and wicked men. The crisis has come, and from this time forth and for evermore the name of Jehovah shall be exalted. The wicked shall perish, and all who receive life everlasting must know and obey and honor and joyfully serve him whose name alone is Jehovah. His illustrious fame and honorable reputation must find a place in the mind of every creature that lives. He has taken out from among earth's nations a people for his name. To them is given the privilege of now proclaiming his great name. W 3/1/34

## January 2

(95)

*He hath commanded his covenant for ever; holy and  
reverend is his name.—Ps. 111: 9.*

Jehovah's covenants are for the purpose of bringing the great issue to a climax and to convince all that he is God. He has placed his name upon his people taken out from among the nations, and who are made a part of his elect servants under Christ the Servant, and this honor he has given to none other. Satan and his servants have defamed Jehovah's name, but now the time is at hand when his name shall be exalted and only those who love his name shall live. "His name shall endure for ever: his name shall be continued as long as the sun; and men shall be blessed in him: all nations shall call him blessed." (Ps. 72: 17) His covenant people he has chosen and gathered unto himself for his purpose. The new covenant is his instrument to gather unto himself a people to bear testimony to and have part in vindicating his name. W 4/15/34

### **January 3**

(148)

*Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key  
of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves.*

—Luke 11:52.

Now those of the temple who are proving faithful appreciate that the vindication of Jehovah's name is all-important and that to have part therein these faithful creatures must unselfishly devote themselves to him. Such unselfish devotion to Jehovah is the key of knowledge and understanding. Religious leaders among the Jews by reason of their selfishness took away from themselves and from others the key of knowledge. When Jesus presented to them the truths of the kingdom the Pharisees not only rejected the truth, but caused others to do likewise. The same has been true of the organizations of so-called "Christianity", particularly of the "man of sin" class. Self-gain blinds one to the proper devotion to God. Thus blinded, one makes no progress in knowledge and understanding.  
*W 4/1/34*

### **January 4**

(9)

*Then Daniel requested of the king, and he set Shadrach,  
Meshack, and Abednego, over the affairs of the  
province of Babylon.—Dan. 2:49.*

Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego were in Satan's world but were no part of it. God permitted them to be there that they might serve as witnesses for him; thus they pictured the company of God's remnant to-day on earth who are in the world but are not part of it and who are given certain duties to perform as Jehovah's witnesses, to proclaim the message of the vengeance of our God, calling attention of the people to the vindication of Jehovah's name by Christ Jesus. Daniel pictured Christ Jesus, who, as the Greater Daniel, sits in Jehovah's palace. Daniel and his three Hebrew brethren were in the world of Babylon bearing testimony to Jehovah's name and power; even so now Christ Jesus and the remnant are 'in the midst of the enemy', bearing testimony to God's name. *W 10/1/34*

**January 5**

(209)

*But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem.—Heb. 12:22.*

The apostle was addressing those in Christ Jesus in the new covenant. He did not say, Ye are come to Egypt, or to any part of Satan's organization, but "unto mount Sion", which is God's organization, and means the establishment of the kingdom of God. The building up of Zion, Jehovah's capital organization, began when his words were fulfilled, to wit, "Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion." The Lord Jesus Christ, the Messenger of the covenant, then straightway came to the temple. Thereafter the 'coming unto Zion' is completed with the bringing of the remnant into the opened temple of God. They come unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, which has now descended out of heaven to take charge of the world by its rightful ruler Christ and to vindicate the name of Jehovah. W 5/15/34

**January 6**

(7)

*Therefore, seeing we have this ministry, as we have received mercy, we faint not.—2 Cor. 4:1.*

Jehovah does not gather his saints unto himself merely for the pleasure of having them with him, but that they might do service concerning his name. Those gathered into the temple, and toward whom the new covenant is inaugurated, have become a part of "the heavens"; hence says the Lord's prophet: "The heavens shall declare his righteousness: for God is judge himself." (Ps. 50:6) The Lord made the apostle Paul an able minister of the new covenant. Likewise all who are brought to maturity in Christ and into the temple are made ministers of the new covenant. This is particularly true at the inauguration of the covenant. Those receiving this ministry, appreciating the fact that it proceeds from the Lord and that their strength is in the Lord, faint not. They have 'obtained mercy from the Lord to be faithful'. W 6/1/34

## **January 7**

(238)

*And I covenant unto you, as my Father hath covenanted unto me, a kingdom.—Luke 22:29, Roth.*

Jehovah covenanted unto his beloved Son, Christ Jesus, a kingdom, which kingdom is the capital organization of Jehovah, and of which Christ Jesus is the Head and Lord. In God's due time that kingdom, which is the holy city or heavenly organization, completely dedicated and devoted to Jehovah God, comes down from God out of heaven and takes charge of the affairs of the world. (Rev. 21:2, 10) Jehovah authorizes Christ Jesus to covenant unto his faithful brethren for a part or place in that kingdom, that such faithful ones might be a part of his royal organization. It is the kingdom or holy organization that completely vindicates Jehovah's name after first bearing testimony to his name. That covenant for the kingdom is separate and distinct from the new covenant, but is closely related thereto. One must be in the new covenant before he can be in the kingdom. W 6/15/34

## **January 8**

(93)

*The secret of the Lord is with them that fear him; and he will shew them his covenant.—Ps. 25:14.*

Jehovah's covenant is his will or purpose expressed in his Word, and states the means employed by him to put his will into force and effect. His purpose is certain to be accomplished, and he chooses his means of bringing about its accomplishment. His purpose is a secret, and therefore hid from all creatures who fail to have an appreciation of man's insignificance and of the goodness and supremacy of Jehovah. The man who does not fear God cannot have a proper appreciation of the relation of the creature to the Creator. It is to the humble-minded and obedient ones who continue to fear God, and who seek to know him, that God reveals his purpose or his covenant. Any man impressed with his own importance does not fear God and is not in position to learn and to appreciate God's purpose or his covenant. W 7/1/34

**January 9** (70)

*Belshazzar . . . commanded to bring the golden and silver vessels which his father Nebuchadnezzar had taken out of the temple which was in Jerusalem; that the king, and his princes . . . might drink.—Dan. 5:1, 2.*

The golden vessels here mentioned represented those who are now diligent in putting forth their best endeavors to honor Jehovah's name. At the present time "Christendom's" elect, the visible seed of the Serpent Satan, would bring greater reproach upon Jehovah's name by persecuting, humiliating and ill-using God's faithful remnant who bear testimony to his name and his kingdom and declare the day of his vengeance upon Satan's organization. Modern Babylon, or "Christendom", would desecrate these chosen vessels of the Lord by using them in a ridiculous manner and thus in their carousal would make a merry time with them. These temple vessels are for sacred use in Jehovah's service, and not for any selfish pleasure, which latter use brings further reproach upon his name. W 11/1/34

**January 10** (102)

*Thy righteousness is like the great mountains; thy judgments are a great deep, O Lord.—Ps. 36:6.*

By his great executioner Jehovah will mete out exact justice to those who have willfully broken his everlasting covenant concerning sanctity of human life. His judgment toward men is tempered with mercy toward those of good heart and who desire righteousness. He has commanded that his mercy shall be shown toward all those who have been unwittingly drawn into Satan's trap and caused to break His law. His acts of justice are like the great deep. His mercy endureth for ever. Those who desire knowledge and understanding may now learn about the loving-kindness of our God. He has made known to the temple company that he is the fountain of life and that there is none other. He has given them such knowledge not merely for their own good, but that they might make this known to those of good will. W 8/1/34

*The Lord preserveth all them that love him: but all the wicked will he destroy.—Ps. 145: 20.*

Jehovah God, the Creator of heaven and earth, is the Creator of all things good. He has never created a wicked thing, because he is holy and all his works are perfect. (Deut. 32: 4) The wicked are those who willfully violate God's law. When a creature becomes wicked, the responsibility for so doing cannot be laid to Jehovah. If the creature yields to sinful temptation or influence and turns to wickedness, it cannot be charged to God, for the reason that God tempts no man. (Jas. 1: 13) All the ways of Jehovah God are right and righteous. God hates wickedness, and he has definitely fixed the destiny of the wicked. "The transgressors shall be destroyed together: the end of the wicked shall be cut off." (Ps. 37: 38) There are wicked spirit creatures and wicked human creatures. The end of all such is destruction. W 9/1/34

*Yea, thy law is within my heart. I have preached righteousness in the great congregation: lo, I have not restrained my lips, O Lord, thou knowest.—Ps. 40: 8, 9.*

Jehovah writes his law into the heart of those who delight to do his will. His beloved Son, always faithfully devoted to his Father, says: "I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart." (Ps. 40: 8) This Psalm expresses the heart condition of those who are in the new covenant and who are diligent in proving their faithfulness to God. The new covenant is made with Christ Jesus in behalf of those who agree to do the will of God, and those who are brought into that covenant, and who continue faithful, must have the law of God written in their hearts and must from the heart declare the righteousness of Jehovah; otherwise they could not be the 'people of God taken out for his name'.—Jer. 31: 33. W 5/1/34

**January 13**

(142)

*The promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.—Rom. 4: 13.*

Jehovah's unconditional promise to Abraham is called the Abrahamic covenant in that Abraham served to picture Jehovah himself, while Sarah his wife served to picture Jehovah's organization, which brings forth the seed for his purpose. That is a unilateral or one-sided covenant, a declaration of the unchangeable purpose of Jehovah to do a certain thing, and the result thereof does not at all depend upon what Abraham or any other creature might do or fail to do. That covenant announces God's provision for man to obtain life, for therein it is plainly stated, "In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed." The blessing of the families of the earth means that God will give them opportunity to live, which opportunity must come in his appointed way, through the promised seed, Christ Jesus. W 7/15/34

**January 14**

(261)

*Behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.—Rev. 5: 5.*

Jehovah uses the lion as a symbol of justice and judgment. Christ Jesus is the judicial officer of Jehovah to whom is committed all judgment in heaven and in earth, together with the authority and power to execute judgment. (John 5: 22-27) Jesus Christ is therefore appropriately named "The Lion of the tribe of Juda". Of all who praise and serve Jehovah, Christ Jesus is the Head and chief. His judgments are in strict harmony with justice. To the workers of iniquity Christ Jesus the executioner of Jehovah's judgment is a power of evil, but to those who love and serve Jehovah the Chief Officer is a shield and strength and protection. (Phil. 4: 13; 1 Tim. 1: 12) It is by the grace of God through Christ Jesus that the victory for the faithful is gained.—1 Cor. 15: 57. W 12/1/34

**January 15**

(11)

*And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM.*

*—Ex. 3:14.*

Centuries ago God began to bring his name before fallen men. He revealed to Moses his name Jehovah; then to Egypt Jehovah 'went to redeem unto himself a people and to make him a name'. (2 Sam. 7:23) God did not bodily appear in Egypt, but he sent Moses as his servant. And thus Jehovah appeared there in a representative capacity. Egypt was a type of the world, and Pharaoh its ruler was a type of Satan, the god of this wicked world. Moses was a type of Christ Jesus, the great Prophet and Servant by whom Jehovah redeems a people for himself and causes the name of the Most High to be put in the right place in the mind of all intelligent creatures. In his due time Jehovah will cause all his creatures to know his name and its meaning and to have in memory the time when he first revealed his name to man as Jehovah; and that memorable time dates from his going to Egypt. W 3/1/34

**January 16**

(307)

*They shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the Lord.—Jer. 31:34.*

This prophecy applies entirely to those in the new covenant and who continue faithful. Christ Jesus at the temple is Jehovah's great High Priest in charge of the temple organization. He is made the Teacher of the temple class; hence he teaches all the children of Zion. Jehovah is the great Teacher, and he and Christ Jesus are the teachers of God's people; hence the Lord says to his children: "Yet shall not thy teachers be removed into a corner any more, but thine eyes shall see thy teachers." (Isa. 30:20) Those at the temple are equally favored. They are all on a common level and know God, from the least to the greatest of them. All of these discern that the chief issue is Jehovah's name. W 5/1/34

**January 17**

(273)

*And the heavens shall declare his righteousness: for God is judge himself.—Ps. 50: 6.*

Jehovah's purpose is to vindicate his name. Let that great truth always be foremost in the mind. All other things are incidental to and hence secondary to the vindication of Jehovah's name. Having builded up his capital organization Zion Jehovah now appears in his glory to those of Zion. Zion's children, now gathered unto him at his temple, are taught of God by and through Christ Jesus, the chief one of the Zion organization. The faithful now see their Teachers, to wit, Jehovah and Christ Jesus. Being obedient to what they are taught, the children of Zion walk on in the right way singing the praises of the Most High. They are Jehovah's saints now made to 'sit with Christ Jesus in heavenly places' and form a part of the heavenly organization. Being thus gathered unto the Lord they shall declare his righteousness. The faithful remnant are doing this very thing. W 4/1/34

**January 18**

(17)

*Thou shewest lovingkindness unto thousands, and recompensest the iniquity of the fathers into the bosom of their children after them: the Great, the Mighty God, the Lord of hosts, is his name.—Jer. 32: 18.*

Armageddon is near at hand. In that battle Christ Jesus, the Vindicator, will destroy the wicked; but the kindness of Jehovah has provided a place of refuge for those who now turn their hearts toward righteousness, seeking to join themselves unto Jehovah's organization. Such are the Jonadab class. Jehovah's provision for them is a rich provision. There is an obligation laid upon Jehovah's witnesses to bring these truths to the attention of the Jonadabs, that they may be advised of the only way of escape in the great world disaster shortly. They must know Jehovah, take their stand on his side, and there remain steadfastly faithful, serving him, if they would receive God's gift of life through Christ Jesus. W 8/1/34

**January 19**

(111)

*Moses and Aaron went in, and told Pharaoh, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, Let my people go, that they may hold a feast unto me.—Ex. 5:1.*

Such was not a request that Pharaoh or his officers should issue a permit or license to worship or to serve Jehovah, but the same constituted a demand made by the express commandment of Jehovah that Pharaoh and his officers must quit interfering with the chosen people of God in the exercise of their liberty to freely worship and serve Jehovah. Even so now the people taken out for Jehovah's name, to wit, the remnant, are sent forth by him and commanded to bear testimony before the rulers, and it would be wholly inconsistent for them to ask the rulers if they might preach the gospel, but it is their business to demand that Satan and his representatives cease their interference with Jehovah's witnesses in delivering this gospel of the kingdom. W 3/1/34

**January 20**

(63)

*Ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.—Heb. 10:36.*

If God's anointed would hold the key of knowledge and understanding they must keep always to the fore that Jehovah's chief purpose is to vindicate his name, that it is his name that is involved, and that the kingdom is the means used to accomplish that vindication. To have part in vindicating Jehovah's name is not a selfish work. The part the remnant can have is that of being faithful witnesses for Jehovah. Thus they maintain their integrity toward him. Those of the anointed who are faithful unto death will receive everlasting life and be associated with Christ in his heavenly work and glory. But such reward is secondary to the vindication of Jehovah's name and is given only where unselfish devotion is shown to God. To have part in vindicating his holy name is the condition precedent to entering into divine life. W 4/1/34

**January 21**

(189)

*Where a covenant is it is necessary for the death to be brought in of him that hath covenanted; for a covenant over dead persons is firm.—Heb. 9:16, 17, Roth.*

The shedding of the blood of Christ Jesus put the new covenant in force. The death of the disciples and the others of the faithful followers of Christ, including the remnant today, was and is entirely unnecessary to the making and putting in operation of the new covenant. In Egypt there was just one sacrifice, the lamb slain, and immediately the law covenant was made and went into effect. Likewise the new covenant went into effect when the antitypical Lamb, Christ Jesus, was slain. The making and operation of the new covenant did not have to wait until the death of the last member of Christ's body and which must take place at the end of the period of sacrifice. The blood of Christ's body members is not necessary to the making and operation of the new covenant. W 4/15/34

**January 22**

(316)

*Yet shall not thy teachers be removed into a corner any more, but thine eyes shall see thy teachers.—Isa. 30:20.*

All at the temple will realize that their spiritual food comes to them from their Teachers, Jehovah and Christ Jesus, and not from any man. In times past Jehovah and Christ Jesus have been pushed on the side and men have been looked to as the teachers in the church; but not so any more, after the cleansing of the temple. Concerning the faithful ones in the temple, and therefore in the new covenant, Jehovah says: "They shall all know me." This implies that the revelation of Jehovah's glory from the temple and the revelation of the meaning of his name and titles are made known to all the temple class. Such revelation Jehovah has given to his people taken out for his name, and they appreciate the fact that their greatest privilege is to now have a part in the vindication of his name. W 5/1/34

**January 23**

(331)

*But ye are come unto mount Sion, . . . and to an innumerable company of angels.—Heb. 12: 22.*

It is at the Lord's coming to the temple for judgment that his angels accompany him and he gathers unto himself those in the new covenant who up to that time had demonstrated their faithfulness. Angels participated in the inauguration of the old law covenant with Israel. They delivered God's message with authority from him. God did not permit any disobedience to the message he caused these angels to transmit. (Gal. 3: 19 ; Heb. 2: 2) The words spoken by the angels were to the Israelites at Mount Sinai at the inauguration of the law covenant, and which people were designated as "the church", that is, a selected or gathered-out people, because they were a people gathered out for Jehovah's name. (Acts 7: 37, 38) At the 'coming unto Mount Sion' a "company of angels" attend and participate in the inauguration ceremonies of the new covenant. W 5/15/34

**January 24**

(258)

*They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, saying, Come, and let us join ourselves to the Lord in a perpetual covenant that shall not be forgotten.—Jer. 50: 5.*

This expressed the desire of the fully consecrated to be faithful to the new covenant as the people taken out from the nations for Jehovah's name. By coming to the Lord and inquiring concerning Zion, Jehovah's organization, those in line for the kingdom thus pledge themselves to be faithful. The new covenant is inaugurated toward them and also they are taken into the kingdom covenant, being made a part of God's capital organization and anointed and commissioned to do a specific work in his name. Concerning this the prophecy of Jeremiah 3: 14 is written: "Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you; and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion." W 6/1/34

**January 25**

(162)

*These are the words of the covenant, which the Lord commanded Moses to make with the children of Israel in the land of Moab, beside the covenant which he made with them in Horeb.—Deut. 29:1.*

That covenant made in Moab foreshadowed the covenant for the kingdom. The Moab covenant was a means instituted to prepare the Israelites to enter into Canaan and to serve God there. It also pictured Jehovah's purpose to do a preparatory work with his people on earth since 1918. At that time in Moab natural Israel was in a land not assigned for its inheritance. Likewise God's people taken out for his name, that is, spiritual Israel, are in the world but not part of it at the time they are taken into the kingdom covenant. This covenant also was looking to the vindication of Jehovah's name. The remnant were taken into the covenant for the kingdom after 1918 and after the birth of the kingdom. W 6/15/34

**January 26**

(132)

*Jehovah thy God is a devouring fire.—Deut. 4:24, A.R.V.*

It was upon the plains of Moab that God caused Moses to speak thus to the Israelites. To those toward whom the new covenant is inaugurated and who are brought into the kingdom covenant the words are repeated by the apostle, and for this reason the apostle adds: "Let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear." (Heb. 12: 28, 29) The Israelites in Moab were a typical people. The spiritual Israelites taken out from the nations for Jehovah's name are an antitypical people. To the latter the rules of Jehovah, announced to govern his organization, are unbending and unalterable. These must be obeyed, and woe to him who fails or refuses to obey. Jehovah's will, or covenant, not only is expressed but is now revealed and continues to be revealed to those in the kingdom covenant who faithfully and joyfully serve the kingdom. W 7/1/34

**January 27**

(10)

*Nebuchadnezzar the king made an image of gold, . . . he set it up in the plain of Dura, in the province of Babylon. Then Nebuchadnezzar the king sent to gather together . . . the rulers of the provinces.—Dan. 3:1, 2.*

The image of gold pictures Satan's entire organization, both visible and invisible. The "image" was set up in 606 B C., and Satan's world has continued since; but from and after A D. 1918 Satan lays special stress on his organization because he knows his time is short before the great battle of Armageddon is fought. About 1918 he began to assemble or "gather together" the official element of the whole earth to use them in due time in the battle. Satan's purpose is to support his side of the controversy and to bring reproach upon God, and to turn all mankind, including true worshipers of Jehovah, away from the true God and to the worship of creatures or the work of creatures' hands, or to destroy them. W 10/1/34

**January 28**

(74)

*How precious thy lovingkindness, O God, therefore the sons of men under the shadow of thy wings seek refuge.—Ps. 36:7, Roth.*

Jehovah having builded up Zion and gathered unto himself his saints, he gives them a broader view of his loving-kindness than previously it was possible for them to have. Those at the temple, being now in the secret place of the Most High and there taught of God through Christ Jesus, are commanded to go out among the people and from "the housetops" to declare Jehovah's name, making known to those of good will the loving-kindness of Jehovah to the children of men. This loving-kindness, when known, is precious to those who love Jehovah. They know that their own refuge is under the shadow of the wings of the Almighty, and they delight to point others to God's provision for their refuge. Jehovah's rich provision makes glad the heart of everyone who is in his royal organization. W 8/1/34

**January 29**

(133)

*There were giants [the Nephilim, R. V.] in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men.—Gen. 6: 4.*

Nephilim means “fellers”, bullies or tyrants. Those wicked ones joined Satan in his rebellion and have operated with him since in his wicked endeavors to reproach Jehovah God and to turn all creation away from God. They have fought since the days of Eden against those who have tried to be righteous. They are alive and mortal enemies of the saints. They will fight on Satan’s side at Armageddon and suffer complete defeat. “The sons of God” are angels that were once holy and in Jehovah’s service but did not join Satan in his rebellion, but afterwards yielded to his subtle and wicked influence, became disobedient, thus losing the privilege and opportunity of serving Jehovah, and have since been imprisoned. They are alive and are mentioned in 1 Peter 3: 19, 20. There is some hope of their recovery. W 9/1/34

**January 30**

(326)

*He was transfigured before them. And there appeared unto them Elias, with Moses; and they were talking with Jesus.—Mark 9: 2, 4.*

In that transfiguration scene Elias (Elijah) pictured Christ Jesus doing a certain work concerning the kingdom, to wit, the work of ‘preparing the way before the Lord’. Moses pictured Christ Jesus the great Prophet, Priest and King and who therefore is the Executive Officer of Jehovah. That transfiguration had reference to God’s kingdom under Christ Jesus his mighty Vindicator. This is made certain by the words of verse 1. “A voice came out of the cloud [symbolic of Jehovah’s presence], saying, This is my beloved Son; hear him.” (Mark 9: 7) That is to say, the dramatic transfiguration there pictured Christ Jesus, God’s beloved Son, his great High Priest, whom all men must obey because God had sent him forth as his vindicator to carry out his purpose. W 7/15/34

**January 31**

(292)

*In the same hour came forth fingers of a man's hand, and wrote over against the candlestick upon the plaster of the wall of the king's palace.—Dan. 5:5.*

The "fingers of a man's hand", which did the writing, pictured Jehovah's power exercised, and by his "right hand", Christ Jesus. The Lord Jesus at the temple uses the faithful remnant on earth in connection with his work in serving notice upon the visible part of Satan's organization, and of this fact the invisible part of that organization no doubt takes notice. Thus God causes Christ Jesus to bring forcibly to the enemy's attention notice and warning of the enemy's early downfall. Jehovah does nothing in the dark, but acts against the enemy only after full warning, and he causes his witnesses to openly and aboveboard declare his judgments against the enemy. The enemy will never be able to say they did not hear and that they unintentionally overlooked what Jehovah said. W 11/1/34

**February 1**

(15)

*God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: and that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy.*

—Rom. 9:22, 23.

Among those who name and serve Jehovah God there are "vessels" of honor and "vessels" of dishonor. (2 Tim. 2:19, 20) The vessels of honor are those truly and faithfully devoted to Jehovah and his kingdom interests. The vessels of dishonor are those assuming to represent God and who misuse their opportunities because of selfishness and wickedness. Many have been perplexed as to why Jehovah would permit the wicked to continue to exercise power over earth after he has set his King upon his "holy hill" and caused him to begin his judgments. Manifestly the reason is that he might cause a witness to be given to his name and might manifest his supreme power and demonstrate his riches of glory on those faithful to him. W 12/1/34

**February 2**

(250)

*The Lord said unto Moses, Pharaoh's heart is hardened, he refuseth to let the people go.—Ex. 7: 14.*

It would not be permissible to ask for a license or a permit to be issued by worldly institutions to preach the gospel of God's kingdom any more than it would have been proper for Moses and Aaron to ask permission of Pharaoh to worship God. Now Satan's earthly representatives are given full warning, time and opportunity to put on identification garments before Jehovah takes final action against them. Jehovah's supremacy must be made known to the rulers, and his witnesses must declare his supremacy and the greatness of his name throughout the earth. It therefore must displease Jehovah for anyone to ask permission of antitypical Pharaoh and his officers that he might go about and preach the gospel. Since God has commanded warning notice to be given, Jehovah's servants must obey his commandments. W 3/1/34

**February 3**

(3)

*And thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed.—Gen 22: 17, 18.*

Jehovah took Abraham out of his native land and sent him down to Canaan and there made a covenant or unconditional promise, using Abraham as the one to whom the promise was at the time expressed, and there expressed his purpose to produce a seed by and through which all the families and nations of the earth may be blessed. The promised seed is Christ, whom Jehovah constitutes as his chief witness, high priest and vindicator. Surely the selection of the seed was not merely for man's salvation, because God could have killed Adam and started a new race. The selection of the seed was for the very purpose of vindicating Jehovah's name, proving Jehovah carries out his purposes according to his will. A secondary provision thereof was that those who should obey the seed would be blessed with everlasting life. W 4/1/34

**February 4**

(219)

*The God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, make you perfect in every good work.—Heb. 13:20, 21.*

It is Jehovah who perfects the ones taken out for his name. This he does through the blood of the new covenant. The new covenant applies exclusively to those consecrated to do God's will. It is through such consecrated ones that God takes out a people for his name. He sanctifies them for his purpose. The Scriptures call the new covenant the "everlasting covenant" for the reason that it is a part of the original expressed purpose of Jehovah to bring forth a seed, the primary purpose of which seed is to accomplish the vindication of Jehovah's name. Only those taken into the new covenant and who then prove faithful unto the end are taken out and made a part of the seed of promise.

W 4/15/34

**February 5**

(155)

*And in nowise shall they teach every one his fellow-citizen and every one his brother, saying, Get to know the Lord! because all shall know me from the least unto the greatest of them.—Heb. 8:11, Roth.*

This definitely limits the application of the scripture to those in the new covenant and who are fellow citizens and whose citizenship is in heaven. We have now reached the end of the world, not merely the end of a certain time, the end of the age, but the end of the operation of Satan's organization by sufferance of Jehovah, and hence the time when preparation is being made to completely destroy Satan's power and organization. Jehovah has taken out of the nations a people for his name; hence the climax of the new covenant is reached, and now the teaching of God's people is no longer done by men, particularly by such men as "elective elders", but all in Zion are children of God by his organization and are now taught of God.—Isa. 54:13. W 5/1/34

**February 6**

(321)

*All the rulers of the provinces were gathered together unto the dedication of the image that Nebuchadnezzar the king had set up; and they stood before the image that Nebuchadnezzar had set up.—Dan. 3:3.*

The real and greater dedication of the image of gold, or Satan's organization, takes place after the beginning of God's kingdom, in 1914, when Christ Jesus was placed upon his throne and sent forth to rule. The beginning of the kingdom was a challenge to Satan's organization. Hence all the official element of Satan's organization must take their stand for one or the other of these organizations, and thus clearly identify themselves. The Devil's purpose in forcing this identification after the 'birth of the man child', the kingdom, is that he might "get" or destroy Jehovah's witnesses. Since 1918 these witnesses have been bearing testimony to the kingdom, and Satan's determination is to destroy them. W 10/1/34

**February 7**

(301)

*For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.—2 Cor. 4:6.*

As the faithful temple company look at the face of Christ, the Greater Moses and inaugurator of the new covenant, they see that the face of the great Mediator is not veiled, but the light from that unveiled face shines into their hearts and there creates the proper motive for serving God, and they do serve him unselfishly. It gives to such faithful ones a light of knowledge and understanding of Jehovah's purpose, revealing to them the Lord's glory. But the faithful do not take this honor or glory to themselves, realizing that it is from the Lord. In humility and gladness of heart they walk on in the Lord's presence. Such ministry of the new covenant is a great honor conferred upon them, and an invaluable treasure. "We have this treasure in earthen [human] vessels."—Verse 7. W 6/1/34

## February 8

(64)

*You are they who have continued with me in my trials. And I covenant for you, even as my Father has covenanted for me, a kingdom.—Luke 22:28, 29, Diaglott.*

At the time Jesus announced the kingdom covenant to his faithful disciples Judas, who foreshadowed the rebellious complainers and fearful ones, had been ordered out and was then away. Now at the temple the "old men" who are complainers, faultfinders, selfish ones and opposers, are not taken into the kingdom, but are debarred from entering. When the Israelites left Mount Sinai they were in line for the promised land, but only a few entered. Up to the Lord's coming to the temple many spiritual Israelites were in line for the kingdom, but those who committed the "sin of Samaria", who complain, find fault and oppose and fear to boldly proclaim the message of God's kingdom against the enemy are left out. Those taken into the kingdom covenant must have proved their faithfulness up to that point of time. W 6/15/34

## February 9

(87)

*What man is he that feareth the Lord? him shall he teach in the way that he shall choose.—Ps. 25:12.*

Fear does not mean merely respect, honor and reverence for God. It means much more than that. The man who realizes that God is all-powerful and that He cannot look with approval upon anything unrighteous, and who learns and appreciates that all men are imperfect and of themselves could not stand before God and live, such a man then begins to fear God; and that is the beginning of wisdom. He must have some knowledge of God before he can start in the way of acquiring wisdom. He who fears God desires to learn concerning God's will and then to do it. The more he learns, the more he appreciates the fact of his imperfections and his inability to stand before the great Creator. He continues then to grow in godly fear. In this attitude of mind he is in position to be taught and choose the right way. W 7/1/34

**February 10**

(181)

*As sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign, through righteousness, unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord.—Rom. 5:21.*

After the degradation of Adam every one of his offspring was disqualified to enter into a covenant with God. All were born sinners, and God could not make a covenant with any creature who is a sinner. Any creature entering into a covenant with Jehovah must have a standing before God, which standing means that the creature is actually justified or that by reason of his faith God counts him as justified. The new covenant was made with Christ Jesus and afterwards with only those who, first having exercised faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus, made a consecration to do God's will, thereby entering into an agreement by sacrifice, and who were then justified. God has expressly provided that life shall come to those of the human race who have real faith in the blood of Christ Jesus.—Rom. 6:23. W 7/15/34

**February 11**

(236)

*Thou shalt separate three cities for thee in the midst of thy land, . . . Thou shalt prepare thee a way, and divide the coasts of thy land, which the Lord thy God giveth thee to inherit, into three parts, that every slayer may flee thither.—Deut. 19:2, 3.*

These cities of refuge provided by God's law were a place of protection for those who had unawares broken His everlasting covenant by taking human life. This loving provision by Jehovah being announced at the time of making the covenant with Israel in Moab shows that the cities of refuge foreshadow God's loving-kindness for protection of people of good will during Armageddon; that Jehovah's anointed remnant on earth have a positive obligation now to be performed toward those of the Jonadab company; and that the Jonadabs must perform certain specific requirements in order to be assured of refuge during the trouble, and to ultimately receive life. W 8/1/34

**February 12**

(256)

*The great dragon . . . was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.—Rev. 12:9.*

Lucifer rebelled against God and 'corrupted his sanctuaries by the multitude of his iniquities'. (Ezek. 28:18, A.R.V.) At the beginning of his official term his organization or dwelling-place was devoted to God and righteousness, but he willfully became wicked. Others joined him in his treasonable course, thus corrupting the dwelling-place of Satan and those in his immediate organization. That he has a company of angels that operate with him other scriptures quite clearly prove. That company of wicked angels fought with Satan at the time Christ cast Satan and his host out of heaven, and their operations are now confined to things pertaining to earth. At the beginning they were creatures of God, but they rebelled and became the 'seed of the Serpent'. Satan is tyrannical in the extreme; those spirits working with him are wicked tyrants. W 9/1/34

**February 13**

(330)

*But ye are come unto mount Sion, and . . . to the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven.—Heb. 12:22, 23.*

Truly the names of these are enrolled in heaven since Zion has brought forth her children, and their citizenship is in heaven. The faithful saints who long ago died in faith have first been resurrected and gathered to Zion. Those remaining on earth are now 'caught up with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air'. The scripture identifies the time, when it says: "And to God [Jehovah] the Judge of all." Jehovah is the Judge over all. His judgment first begins at the house of God when Christ Jesus, the duly appointed Judge, there appears and begins judgment for the purpose of purifying the "sons of Levi". (Mal. 3:3) That judgment determines who shall be approved and anointed to offer unto God an offering in righteousness.—Heb. 13:15. W 5/15/34

**February 14**

(148)

*In the same hour came forth fingers of a man's hand, and wrote over against the candlestick upon the plaster of the wall of the king's palace; and the king saw the part of the hand that wrote.—Dan. 5:5.*

From 1926 to 1933 Jehovah's message of warning heralded by his faithful witnesses was boldly delivered and raised high by wide publication. Thus "Christendom" was compelled to take notice thereof. Her rulers have seen Jehovah's human agents used to give them warning notice, and they have heard the notice, but they have not seen or discerned Jehovah's spirit which moves such servants to bring that warning notice to them. The handwriting on the wall was by God's power. It foretells the doom of Satan's organization, Babylon, including "Christendom". Notice and warning must be delivered before execution of the judgment. That is why Jehovah's witnesses engage in declaring the day of vengeance of our God. W 11/1/34

**February 15**

(266)

*Vessels . . . some to honour, and some to dishonour. If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified.—2 Tim. 2:20, 21.*

Beginning of judgment by Christ Jesus in 1918 marks the time for beginning the testing of all creatures who claim to be servants of Jehovah and his kingdom. Whether the end of that testing be honor or dishonor and destruction is determined by the course of action taken with reference to God's kingdom interests. Those of "Christendom", particularly the ecclesiastics thereof, take unto themselves the honor of the kingdom covenant with God. The rulers set up the League of Nations as a substitute for God's kingdom. The "man of sin", while claiming to represent God, joins in the conspiracy against Jehovah's faithful remnant; while the remnant continues to faithfully advertise the King and kingdom. Respectively these classes show by the course of action taken whether they are vessels of dishonor or vessels of honor. W 12/1/34

**February 16**

(285)

*Get thee unto Pharaoh . . . ; and the rod which was turned to a serpent shalt thou take in thine hand.*

—Ex. 7:15.

The rod in the hand of the antitypical Moses is a symbol of the authority and power which Jehovah has fully delegated to Christ Jesus and which he uses to execute Jehovah's purposes. Now the announcement to the world rulers that Christ Jesus, the great Judge, has come to the temple for judgment is a warning to all such of the punishment God will inflict upon his enemies culminating in complete destruction of the world at Armageddon. Moses' rod was employed by Moses and Aaron in invoking the ten plagues upon Egypt, including the death of the firstborn. Here Moses was a type of Christ Jesus, while Aaron pictured the body members of Christ to whom is committed the "testimony of Jesus Christ" and who deliver the testimony. That rod stretched forth symbolically said that this is done by authority of Jehovah. W 3/1/34

**February 17**

(102)

*He will ever be mindful of his covenant.—Ps. 111:5.*

A covenant is a binding agreement or promise to do or not to do a certain thing. Jehovah's expressed purpose to do a certain thing is an unconditional or one-sided covenant. When he gives his word of promise he unconditionally binds himself to carry out that purpose. He says: "I have purposed it, I will also do it." "My word . . . shall accomplish that which I please." A covenant made by Jehovah with one or more of his creatures is a bilateral or two-sided agreement to do certain things, and the other parties to the covenant must do the things mentioned. Jehovah always faithfully performs his part of the covenant. All his covenants made toward man are made for the primary purpose of vindicating his name. They are called Jehovah's covenants because he is the originator and maker of them, and he takes others into his covenants as it pleases him. W 4/1/34

**February 18**

(74)

*They shall all know me . . . , saith the Lord: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more.—Jer. 31: 34.*

There was a time when iniquity was upon Jehovah's covenant people, which lawlessness or iniquity embraces man worship, formalism, particularly a failure to bear testimony to Jehovah's name and kingdom. Such was largely due to ignorance, and the ignorance of God's law is an excuse. Forgiveness of their iniquity is directly related to the great revelation that came to them when gathered to the Lord God at his temple. Iniquity here mentioned is not inherited sin from Adam, because the ones addressed have been previously made free of that sin by Christ's precious blood applied to them when justified. Forgiveness is not granted in order that the covenant people might be taken to heaven, but is for the sake of Jehovah's name, that these cleansed ones might be made a people ready for his name and to testify to his name. W 5/1/34

**February 19**

(243)

*Appoint out for you cities of refuge, whereof I spake unto you by the hand of Moses.—Josh. 20: 2.*

Satan's organization on earth has willfully broken God's everlasting covenant by wantonly and cruelly killing human creatures. God declares his purpose to destroy Satan's official organization on earth because of the violation of the covenant. Since the coming of Jesus to the temple great persecution has been heaped upon God's people in the land of "Christendom"; there is bloodguiltiness on the part of those who have participated in this persecution deliberately. Those who have unwittingly supported those wrongdoers must have some way of escape, otherwise they would fall in the great trouble in the battle of the great day of God Almighty. Jehovah in his loving-kindness has made just such a provision as is needed for their escape; the cities of refuge pictured that way of escape. W 8/1/34

**February 20**

(41)

*For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.—Eph. 6: 12.*

Among those of Satan's organization is the one the Scriptures term "Gog", Satan's chief officer, whom doubtless he appointed to correspond to Christ Jesus, Jehovah's chief officer. The host of wicked ones occupied a place known in Scripture as Magog. Jesus referred to Satan as the "prince [invisible ruler] of this world". Since Satan is called Beelzebub, meaning prince or chief one of devils, there are many other like ones, that is, wicked angels or spirits. Beyond all doubt there is a host of wicked angels or spirit creatures. Satan the Devil is the chief one of that wicked company, and all of such are enemies of God and the mortal enemies of every one who seeks to do God's will. W 9/1/34

**February 21**

(10)

*Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith.—2 Tim. 3: 8.*

This is the time in which the "man of sin", "the son of perdition," is made manifest. The clergy in general, and others that go to make up the "man of sin", while claiming to represent God and his kingdom, are violently opposed to the kingdom and have persecuted those whom Jehovah has taken out as a people for his name and who are delivering the testimony of Jesus Christ. These opposers of Jehovah have had every opportunity to hear the truth, but they refused to learn and to give heed to the truth; therefore they put on the garments of Baal and plainly identify themselves with God's great enemy. "But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest unto all men, as theirs [Jannes' and Jambres'] also was."—2 Tim. 3: 7-9. W 3/1/34

**February 22**

(225)

*Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, . . . and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing.—Gen. 12: 1, 2.*

Abraham was here used as a symbol to represent Jehovah God himself, who alone is the Giver of life, hence the great Father of the families and nations of the earth that live. Abraham's seed is Christ, by and through whom Jehovah gives life to man. (Rom. 6: 23) When Jehovah said to Abraham, "I will . . . make thy name great," manifestly God meant that he would make his own holy name great. The dealing of Jehovah with the Hebrews, the natural descendants of Abraham, was for his (Jehovah's) own name's sake. (Ezek. 20: 9) The purpose of the Abrahamic covenant, therefore, was not primarily for man's benefit, but was and is for the vindication of Jehovah's name. This conclusion is abundantly supported by the Scriptures. Salvation of creatures is entirely secondary to the great purpose of Jehovah. W 4/1/34

**February 23**

(101)

*This commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it.—Deut. 30: 11, 14.*

Jehovah God does not require of his children the doing of impossible things. Increased responsibility falls upon all who have been brought into the kingdom covenant, and necessarily curses are incorporated in the terms of the covenant for those who willfully disobey. (Deuteronomy 27-29) The statement concerning curses or punishments is not made to terrify one into obedience, but to warn against what to avoid. Jehovah has taken out a people for his own great and holy name, and he cannot and will not permit these to be contaminated by the Devil's organization and at the same time continue in Jehovah's organization. In this connection he announces his blessings upon those who do obey from a pure heart.—Deut. 30: 1-10. W 7/1/34

**February 24**

(198)

*By one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. And the holy spirit also beareth witness to us; for after he hath said, This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord.*

—Heb. 10: 14-16, A.R.V.

Who are the "them that are sanctified" here mentioned? Manifestly those who are brought into Christ. "For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren." (Heb. 2: 11) By what means are they sanctified? By "the blood of the [new] covenant, wherewith he was sanctified". (Heb. 10: 29) Thus the inspired apostle specifically applies the terms of the new covenant to the sanctified ones. That new covenant was made with Christ Jesus at the time of his death for and in behalf of his sanctified ones; it is the instrument of Jehovah by which he takes out from the nations a people for his name. W 5/1/34

**February 25**

(159)

*Ye are come unto mount Sion, . . . and to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things.—Heb. 12: 22-24.*

Jesus was made mediator while on earth 1900 years previous to the inauguration of the covenant; but now having come to the temple and gathered unto himself his faithful, he inaugurates the covenant in heaven toward those found faithful up to this point and who have been made to "sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus" with him. Though Abel was entirely innocent when killed at the instance of Satan, his blood was merely that of an imperfect man. Jesus' blood "speaketh better things than that of Abel". This "blood of sprinkling", or the blood of the new covenant, is the blood of the Perfect One, the Faithful and True Witness of Jehovah, and hence has redemptive value and validates the covenant, giving security of its benefits to those who have been brought into the new covenant. W 5/15/34

**February 26**

(158)

*Behold, I will gather them out of all countries whither I have driven them in mine anger, and in my fury, and in great wrath; and I will bring them again unto this place*—*Jer. 32:37.*

Natural Israel foreshadowed "Christendom", including all the consecrated who continue to wear the "filthy garments" of "Christendom". They claim to be for Jehovah, but they are not, even as the Israelites of old claimed to be for God, but were not. As God was angry with natural Israel, so was he angry with the professed spiritual Israel at the Lord's coming to the temple. This included all under the terms of the new covenant and who had not been bold in declaring the message of God's kingdom; also those that had conferred great honor upon men. The remnant of fleshly Israel was saved. Likewise a remnant of spiritual Israel is saved when the Lord appears at the temple for judgment and to inaugurate the new covenant toward the remnant.—Verse 40. W 6/1/34

**February 27**

(323)

*The Lord came from Sinai, and rose up from Seir unto them; he shined forth from mount Paran, and he came with ten thousands of saints: from his right hand went a fiery law for them.*—*Deut. 33:2.*

Jehovah's order of judgment seems to be clearly foreshadowed by the above. Here Sinai, mentioned first, well pictures God's sanctuary. "The chariots of God are twenty thousand, even thousands upon thousands: the Lord is among them, as in Sinai, in the sanctuary." (Ps. 68:17, R.V.) When Jesus appeared at the temple for judgment "Christendom's" iniquity was full, but first judgment must begin at the house of God. Seir, mentioned as second, pictures the "evil servant" class, the "man of sin", "the son of perdition." Mount Paran seems well to picture the "elective elder" class once in line for the kingdom, for at the wilderness of Paran Jehovah cleared out the unfaithful elders.—Num. 13:26-14:39. W 6/15/34

**February 28**

(18)

*Christ, who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.—Titus 2: 13, 14.*

To be ransomed and redeemed from Egypt natural Israel must have an unblemished passover lamb slain in their behalf. Then Jehovah made the covenant and led them out of Egypt to Mount Sinai, where the covenant was inaugurated with fitting ceremonies. Before anyone could be brought into the new covenant the antitypical lamb must be slain. Those brought into the covenant must first be ransomed and be a redeemed people. These are redeemed "with the precious blood of Christ [Jesus], as of a lamb without blemish and without spot". (1 Pet. 1: 19) The purpose of the new covenant is to take out from the nations of the world a peculiar people, zealous for good works, that is, of bearing witness to and having a part in the vindication of Jehovah's name. W 4/15/34

**March 1**

(46)

*Reform, therefore, and turn, that your sins may be blotted out; so that seasons of refreshment may come from the presence of the Lord.—Acts 3: 19, Diag.*

This does not mean cleansing from inherited sins, but cleansing from sins that attach to the church at the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple. Being cleansed, these approved ones are covered with the robe of righteousness and given the garments of salvation, and they are greatly refreshed and rejoice. At the invitation of Christ Jesus, these approved ones enter into the joy of the Lord. (Matt. 25: 21) They are brought into the temple, and the new covenant is inaugurated toward them. It is a time of great refreshing to the cleansed ones. This time of refreshing could not come until after Jesus was sent forth by Jehovah to rule amongst his enemies, and that was done in 1914. The time of refreshing could not come until Jesus returned from heaven and gathered unto himself his faithful ones. W 7/15/34

**March 2**

(269)

*And the Levite that is within thy gates; thou shalt not forsake him; for he hath no part nor inheritance with thee.—Deut. 14: 27.*

Jehovah's commandment was that forty-eight cities and suburbs be given to the Levites. (Num. 35: 7) This shows that the peoples of "Christendom" have no right to crowd Jehovah's servants, and particularly his anointed witnesses, out of the land, but must allow them freedom of activity and a reasonable amount for their maintenance. This also supports the conclusion that those who obtain literature, and thus receive an opportunity to gain knowledge and understanding of the truth concerning Jehovah and his kingdom, should contribute something to defray expense of publication, that more books may be brought to the people by Jehovah's witnesses that other people might know Jehovah's name and his loving-kindness. The Jonadabs now see they also have the privilege of aiding in this work and of bearing the message to others. W 8/1/34

**March 3**

(39)

*Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world?  
... Know ye not that we shall judge angels?*

—1 Cor. 6: 2, 3.

It is undoubtedly the will of God that a witness concerning the unseen powers and the influence that they exercise over the human race must now be given, and that all who love the Lord must put forth their best endeavors to have a part in this witness work. His purpose is to permit Satan and his host to go the very limit in opposition to God and in their effort to turn all creation from Jehovah and to prove Jehovah to be a liar; and then in his own due time God will completely destroy such wicked ones and thus demonstrate his own supreme power. Before their destruction, however, Jehovah will have his faithful and loyal witnesses give testimony to his own great name and to be witnesses before both men and angels.—Ex. 9: 16, Leeser. W 9/1/34

**March 4**

(292)

*And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.—Rev. 12:3.*

Today there are not many in the world aside from God's anointed ones who see or discern this "wonder", Satan's organization. The Devil had tried to hide from "Christendom" knowledge of even his existence and also the existence of his organization. By this means he expected to entrap them all. Now Jehovah causes Satan's organization to be brought to light, and causes his own witnesses to give testimony concerning it, particularly as a warning to all people of good will, and as a notice and warning to the nations of the earth in general. To offset Jehovah's purpose Satan brings forth his organization as a thing to be worshiped, adored and served. Jehovah has permitted Satan's organization to remain to serve his own purpose, including just such a fiery test as that which now comes upon his people. W 10/1/34

**March 5**

(303)

*The law of the Lord is perfect, . . . the judgments of the Lord are true and righteous.—Ps. 19:7, 9.*

The law of God is his perfect rule of action. Justice is that which is right, righteous, pure and equitable. It is the strict conformity to the principles of righteousness and rectitude. Judgment means the finding or conclusion of the court based upon the facts, that is, the judicial determination or decree rendered by one having authority so to do. All of Jehovah's judgments are just, true and righteous, and are in exact harmony with his perfect law. Likewise all judgments of Christ Jesus are just, true and righteous and in harmony with the divine law. With Jehovah his law and equity are the same. In Jehovah's organization ignorance of the law is an excuse or defense. Because of his rule of righteousness Jehovah always brings notice to the wrongdoer before he pronounces judgment against him and executes that judgment. W 12/1/34

**March 6** (226)

*In that day shall there be an altar to the Lord in the midst of the land of Egypt, and a pillar at the border thereof to the Lord. And it shall be for a sign and for a witness unto the Lord of hosts.—Isa. 19: 19, 20.*

Jehovah, applying his words to the "day of the Lord", speaks of his witnesses which are now as 'an altar to the Lord, and a pillar in the border of Egypt'. The time of fulfilment of this prophecy is in the day when God serves notice first and then expresses his vengeance against Satan's organization. Jehovah has taken out his faithful ones, spiritual Israelites, and has made them his witnesses to declare his name in the earth. The prophecy of Jeremiah 32: 20, 21 now applies concerning Jehovah, "which hast set signs and wonders in the land of Egypt, even unto this day, and in Israel, and among other men; and hast made thee a name, as at this day: and hast brought forth thy people Israel out of the land of Egypt." W 3/1/34

**March 7** (175)

*They stood before the image that Nebuchadnezzar had set up. Then an herald cried aloud, To you it is commanded, O people, nations, and languages, that . . . ye fall down and worship the golden image.—Dan. 3: 3-5.*

After A.D. 1918 all leaders and prominent ones of earth were forced to stand before Satan's organization. All who were in the world must stand before this "image" of Satan's organization regardless of whether they are "not of the world" even though in the world. All are in it, and the attempt is to force everybody to stand before the Devil's organization. In 1922, when the attention of God's faithful witnesses on earth began to be called to the fact of the existence of Satan's powerful organization, the faithful then began to take their stand before it, but against it and definitely on Jehovah's side, as pictured by the three Hebrews in Babylon who took their stand on Jehovah's side. W 10/1/34

**March 8** (312)

*At that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise.—Eph. 2: 12.*

What is the purpose of the new covenant? It is Jehovah's instrument to gather unto himself a people for his name, to be used for the vindication of his name. It therefore applies to the church, and not to the world at all. The new covenant was foreshadowed by the old law covenant with Israel, as well as being a replacement substituted for the law covenant. That being true, then, it follows that the purpose of the law covenant foreshadowed the purpose of the new covenant. The purpose of the old law covenant could not have been salvation of the Jewish nation. It was not needed to save that nation. Eventually Gentiles will have the same opportunity of salvation. The Jewish nation, being God's chosen people, did not foreshadow Gentile nations in general, but foreshadowed God's chosen people taken out from the world. W 4/1/34

**March 9** (277)

*Speak ye unto all the congregation of Israel, saying, In the tenth day of this month they shall take to them every man a lamb . . . for an house.—Ex. 12: 3.*

The slaying and eating of the lamb preceded the slaughter of Egypt's firstborn. Even so the death of "Christ, our passover", and the partaking of his merit by the spirit-begotten ones, precede the slaughter of Satan's firstborn at Armageddon. The typical lamb was taken in on the tenth day of Nisan. Antitypically this means (in the present "day of Jehovah" since 1918) the receiving of the Lamb as Jehovah's King enthroned in office, hence the receiving of the Kingdom and undertaking full responsibility of the kingdom interests. On the tenth of Nisan, A.D. 33, Jesus rode into Jerusalem and offered himself as King. This shows that receiving the Lamb into the house since A.D. 1918 signifies far more than accepting Jesus as the ransom sacrifice. W 3/15/34

**March 10**

(68)

*And Moses wrote all the words of the Lord, and rose up early in the morning, and builded an altar under the hill, and twelve pillars.—Ex. 24: 4.*

Some time prior the law covenant had been made with Israel in Egypt, but now at the inauguration the Israelites were instructed as to their relationship to God and their duties to be performed according to his commandments. At Mount Sinai Moses set up a witness by building an altar and twelve pillars. Then he sent young men "which offered burnt offerings, and sacrificed peace offerings of oxen unto the Lord". Those "young men" seemed to picture the remnant described by the prophet Joel (2:28), saying: "I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and . . . your young men shall see visions." Since 1918, and more particularly since 1922, the remnant have been sent forth as Jehovah's witnesses to offer to the Lord, and before the people, 'sacrifices of peace and thanksgiving,' "an offering in righteousness." W 5/1/34

**March 11**

(88)

*But ye are come unto mount Sion, and . . . to the spirits of just men made perfect.—Heb. 12: 22, 23.*

Those begotten of the spirit have Jehovah for their spiritual Father. This is true even while these creatures have an organism of flesh. The expression "spirits of just men made perfect" therefore properly applies to the present-day remnant of spiritual Israel who now are "spiritually minded". (Rom. 8:6) Many begotten of the spirit do not prove faithful and are therefore not 'perfected in the spirit', whereas the remnant found faithful at the temple judgment and made members of the 'elect servant' class are perfected. They were righteous at the time begotten of the holy spirit, and counted as God's sons, and now as such righteous ones they are perfected. They have come faithfully through a discipline administered by their "Father of spirits", Jehovah, that they might be made partakers of his holiness.—Heb. 12: 6-10. W 5/15/34

**March 12**

(252)

*And their seed shall be known among the Gentiles, and their offspring among the people: all that see them shall acknowledge them, that they are the seed which the Lord hath blessed* —Isa. 61: 9.

The physical facts, or things which have come to pass upon Jehovah's true people, since 1919 fully corroborate the above scripture. "Their seed," the true Judeans, are known among the nations, among whom they are the witnesses for Jehovah. "All that see them," that is, all that discern them to be Jehovah's servants, acknowledge them that they are the "seed which the Lord hath blessed", Jehovah's true people taken out for his name. Those taken into the covenant have entered into the joy of the Lord and are now greatly rejoicing that they are privileged to bear testimony to his holy name. Others who are not of the royal house see that these earnest and faithful ones are Jehovah's witnesses, and recognize them as the blessed seed of Jehovah. W 6/1/34

**March 13**

(242)

*Jerusalem! that hath been builded, a true city all joined together as one.—Ps. 122: 3, Roth.*

Even after the taking of certain ones into the temple and into the kingdom covenant there existed a need of cleansing and of clearing out the insincere ones, including those who had selfishly sought and accepted the position of elective elders and who insisted upon walking after their own selfish desires, and hence were not entirely devoted to God and his kingdom. There must be no murmurers, complainers, opposers, or selfish, rebellious ones who abide in the kingdom covenant. Those at the cleansed temple are at unity in Christ. Those in the covenant for the kingdom, and who are the ones taken out as a people for God's name, must walk on, shoulder to shoulder, looking well to the interests of the kingdom, and continue singing the praises of Jehovah God. W 6/15/34

**March 14**

(286)

*Ye shall eat it in haste; it is the Lord's passover.  
For I will pass through the land of Egypt this night,  
and will smite all the firstborn.—Ex. 12: 11, 12.*

The Israelites were required to be in haste, with their loins girded, feet shod, and staff in hand. Antitypically this means that Jehovah's witnesses are not of this world nor subject to Satan's organization and its demands, but are subject to the "Higher Powers"; that they are on the trek and about to leave the anti-typical Egypt, seeing that the wicked organization will shortly be destroyed. The Israelites must abide in the house, under the blood, until morning; which antitypically means that Jehovah's remnant are now hidden and are kept "in the secret place of the Most High", under the protection of Jehovah and his Vindicator, and are thus protected "until the indignation be overpast". They have there entered, by the Lord's grace, and have 'shut the door behind them'. W 3/15/34

**March 15**

(80)

*Jehovah said, My Spirit shall not strive with man for ever, for that he also is flesh.—Gen. 6: 3, A.R.V.*

The words "My Spirit" mean Jehovah himself, that being another way of saying "I the Spirit", and setting off so forcefully the tremendous contrast between "Spirit" the Creator and "flesh", that is, human creatures. Since Adam had become a sinner, Jehovah had been striving with humankind; he had been judging men as to their integrity. Since the time of Enos men had been 'calling themselves by the Lord's name', manifestly to bring reproach upon God's name, in the same manner as many men today call themselves Christians but openly bring reproach upon the name of God and Christ. God's announcement is, in effect, that flesh is not to for ever insult Jehovah's name. Being flesh, man could not therefore go on for ever mocking God, the great Spirit. Provoking God shows that man had not the correct appreciation of what man is as compared with the great Creator. W 9/1/34

**March 16**

(304)

*What thing soever I command you, observe to do it; thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it.*

—Deut. 12: 32.

In making the covenant with Israel in Moab the earth as well as the heavens is called to be a witness thereto. (Deut. 30: 19) This shows that the kingdom covenant and matters pertinent thereto must be published on earth to others than those in the covenant, that they may know what is coming to pass. It is the covenant or purpose of Jehovah that must be declared, and no one must add to or take from that expressed purpose as set forth in his Word. The present time, therefore, is a day of deliberate decision, with full responsibility resting on those brought into the covenant for the kingdom. To those who faithfully serve God at the temple Jehovah reveals his secrets, as these become due to be made known. Learning these secrets, getting an understanding of God's purpose, the kingdom class must make proclamation to others. W 7/1/34

**March 17**

(34)

*Then the king's countenance was changed, and his thoughts troubled him, . . . Then came in all the king's wise men: but they could not read the writing, nor make known to the king the interpretation thereof.*

—Dan. 5: 6-8.

Jehovah's witnesses placed the message of the Lord God high up "on the wall", and God has compelled the rulers in "Christendom" to read the message although they do not understand it. Especially since 1929 they have appealed to the "wise men" of their own organization to place a construction upon or to explain what is the meaning of the "signs" and "wonders" in heaven, that is, the declarations made by Jehovah's witnesses and their continuous work in bearing witness to the people and what relation the same has to the distress and perplexity upon the earth. But none of Babylon's wise men can read or interpret the same, because it is all foreign to them. W 11/1/34

**March 18** (294)

*Your lamb shall be without blemish, . . . And they shall eat the flesh in that night, roast with fire, and unleavened bread.—Ex. 12:5-8.*

In this day of Jehovah the eating of the lamb includes not only partaking of his merit, which cleanses from sin, but also the having a share in the doing of the work which Jesus Christ was sent to earth to do, to wit, to bear testimony to the name of Jehovah to the vindication of his holy name, hence also entering into the joy of the Lord, which is now the strength of the remnant. Furthermore it means that there must be no uncleanness in God's organization or among his people resulting from coming in contact with or compromising with the Devil's organization. There must be no "leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy", meaning the failure or refusal to confess the Lord before men. Jehovah's witnesses must now be entirely separate from Satan's organization. W 3/15/34

**March 19** (58)

*Moses severed three cities on this side Jordan toward the sunrising; that the slayer might flee thither, which should kill his neighbour unawares.—Deut. 4: 41, 42.*

Setting up cities of refuge was notice to those having need therefor that God had made provision for their protection and refuge in time of distress. This prophecy must have fulfilment at the coming of the Greater Moses. February 24, 1918, by the Lord's grace and manifestly by his overruling providence, there was delivered, at Los Angeles, California, for the first time the message "The World Has Ended—Millions Now Living Will Never Die". Thereafter that message was proclaimed throughout "Christendom". No one of God's people understood fully the matter at that time; but since being brought into God's temple they understand that those on earth who may live and not die are the ones who now 'get into the chariot', as Jonadab at Jehu's invitation got into the chariot with Jehu. W 8/1/34

**March 20**

(70)

*Blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.—Rom. 11: 25.*

The greater part of the people of the nation of Israel were hardened at heart and made blind. Since only a small remnant of natural Israel accepted Jesus Christ and were transferred to him and became spiritual, the required 144,000 members of Christ's body must be made up from the Gentiles, those other than Jews. For three and one-half years after Pentecost the gospel was taken exclusively to the Jews that they might have an opportunity to become spiritual. At the end of that time the gospel was taken to Jews and Gentiles, Cornelius being the first Gentile to become a follower of Christ. That marked the "fulness of the Gentiles" coming in. Even so today there is a remnant of spiritual Israel brought under the robe of righteousness and given the garments of salvation. W 4/15/34

**March 21**

(157)

*Then said these men, We shall not find any occasion against this Daniel, except we find it against him concerning the law of his God.—Dan. 6: 5.*

Today Jehovah's witnesses are strictly endeavoring to obey God's law. His rule by which they are now specially guided is this: 'Ye are my witnesses that I am God.' 'Go through the midst of the city [from house to house in "Christendom"] and set a mark upon the foreheads of them that sigh and cry for all the abominations.' The faithful witnesses now heed the admonition of God's Word, "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers," i.e., Jehovah and his King. Having undertaken to do God's will, and having no desire to violate any just or righteous law, these faithful servants of the Lord say: "We ought to obey God rather than men." Where the law of this world contravenes God's law they must obey God's law at any cost. No one of the conspirators understands that fact so fully as does the "evil servant" class. W 12/1/34

**March 22**

(19)

*And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things.—Mark 9: 12.*

This prophecy relating to restoration had reference to restoring the great truths which the Israelites had lost, to wit: That Jehovah is the only true God and that he would make a name for himself by and through his kingdom. The words of Mark 9: 12, "The Son of man . . . must suffer many things, and be set at nought," show that the complete fulfilment of the prophecy concerning Elijah must be preceded by the sufferings of Christ Jesus, all of which pertains to the vindication of Jehovah's name. Jesus did suffer death, was raised from the dead, and went away to receive the kingdom, the setting up of which must be preceded by a restitution work. This restitution work is the restoring to his true followers the great truths that had been hid or lost from them and the preparing of a people for God's purpose. W 7/15/34

**March 23**

(211)

*Jehovah . . . this is my name for ever, and this is my memorial unto all generations.—Ex. 3: 15, A.R.V.*

A memorial marks a day or time certain when some great thing is done which is to be ever afterwards remembered. Among the great things performed by Jehovah by his servant Moses were these: The revelation of his name, the making of the law covenant with Israel, the destruction of Pharaoh's organization, and the deliverance of the Israelites from that oppressive organization. The pivotal point of these great events was the slaying of the passover lamb, because it pointed to the One whom God had ordained to be the vindicator of his great and holy name. All the things performed in Egypt by man as God's representative and servant were incidental to the vindication of Jehovah's name, which is the all-important thing. Because the slaying and eating of the paschal lamb pointed to Jesus, the vindicator, Jehovah said to Moses: "This day shall be unto you for a memorial." W 3/1/34

**March 24**

(206)

*They shall take of the blood, and strike it on the two side posts, and on the upper door post of the houses, wherein they shall eat it.—Ex. 12: 7.*

It is true that the blood signifies that those under it say, "I accept Christ Jesus' blood as my redemptive price"; but to the remnant it means much more. Being the blood of the Victim which validates the new covenant, it signifies that the firstborn of the remnant have entered into that new covenant, the primary purpose of which is to produce a people for Jehovah's name and who will have a part in vindicating that holy name. Upon the remnant the Most High has bestowed the "new name", thus showing them to be a "people for his name". The blood on the door entrances therefore pictures that the new covenant has been inaugurated toward the remnant and hence they must be faithful to that new name and must continue to faithfully bear testimony to Jehovah's name. W 3/15/34

**March 25**

(256)

*He cast upon them the fierceness of his anger, wrath, and indignation, and trouble, by sending evil angels among them.—Ps. 78: 49.*

This refers typically to the plagues in Egypt. Antitypically "evil angels" here clearly appears to refer to the Lord Jesus Christ and to the faithful remnant on earth as members of his body. This conclusion is in harmony with the Scriptures; *evil* does not necessarily mean wickedness, but that which brings misfortune, woe and punishment upon wrongdoers. One translator renders the text thus: "A mission of messengers of misfortune." (Roth.) Jehovah's witnesses do now proclaim his message of misfortune, woe and punishment against Satan's organization, both visible and invisible. As the plagues upon Egypt constituted notice and warning, antitypically fulfilled such must be notice and warning. Jehovah uses his witnesses on earth in connection therewith. W 3/1/34

**March 26**

(111)

*He is the mediator of a better covenant.—Heb. 8: 6.*

God made the old law covenant with Moses as mediator for his chosen people. He made the new covenant with Christ Jesus, whom Moses foreshadowed, as Mediator for his chosen ones. Jehovah sent Moses to Egypt primarily to make a name for Himself, and secondarily to redeem the Israelites. (2 Sam. 7: 23) To this end Moses was required to bear testimony before the Israelites and before the Egyptian ruler, and this he must do prior to the making of the law covenant. Jehovah sent Jesus into the world, antitypical Egypt, to bear witness to his name, hence to make a name for Himself, and he must bear witness before the Jews and others before the new covenant is made. (John 18: 37) He said: "I am come in my Father's name." (John 5: 43) That the chief purpose of the coming of Jesus was to glorify and vindicate Jehovah's name is shown by his words.—John 12: 27, 28. W 4/1/34

**March 27**

(148)

*Thou shalt say unto Pharaoh, Thus saith the Lord, . . . I will slay thy son, even thy firstborn.—Ex. 4: 22, 23.*

The time is rapidly approaching when the firstborn of antitypical Egypt must die. As the blood of the passover lamb sprinkled on the doorposts of the houses in Egypt signified life and preservation to those who remained inside the house and under the protection of that blood-sign, so those trusting in the precious blood of Christ Jesus, and who have been in and remain in the new covenant, have this added assurance of life and preservation. The Lord's supper, properly celebrated to "show the Lord's death till he come", has been a guarantee of their preservation. Now, however, the Lord has come, and his shed blood bespeaks that this is the day of Jehovah's vengeance and destruction of Satan's firstborn of this world. To properly celebrate the Lord's supper now one must certainly show consistency by proclaiming the day of God's vengeance against the enemy's firstborn. W 3/1/34

**March 28**

(170)

*Now, in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.—Eph. 2: 13.*

In Egypt Moses was a type of Jesus. As Moses could not be put to death and at the same time complete the type, the lamb was slain in his stead. It was the lamb's blood that sanctified, perfected and made operative the law covenant. Jesus' blood shed at Calvary made operative the new covenant on the day of his death. Immediately preceding his death he took the cup of wine, symbolic of his blood, and said to his disciples: "This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins." His shed blood was both for making complete and for putting in operation the new covenant, and also served as the redemptive price for mankind. Only by faith in his shed blood can one be brought into a covenant with God. Prior to the exercise of such faith all were aliens from God. Only those who accepted Christ and exercised faith in his blood could be brought nigh to God. W 4/15/34

**March 29**

(24)

*Hence even the first covenant of God's will was not inaugurated apart from blood.—Heb. 9: 18, Moff.*

Making the covenant is one thing; the inauguration thereof is another and later thing. The covenant is made by Jehovah with the one competent to enter into an agreement, hence with the mediator, in behalf of all who shall be brought under the terms of or into the covenant. Inauguration means the appropriate ceremonies inducting one into office and investing him with specific authority. The inauguration of the new covenant is the appropriate ceremonies inducting into office and vesting with specific authority those selected to perform the duties enjoined on them by the covenant. The primary purpose of the new covenant is the vindication of Jehovah's name. To this end he takes out a people for his name who, proving faithful up to a certain point, are invested with authority to be the witnesses to his name. W 5/1/34

**March 30** (301)

*When he seeth the blood upon the lintel, and on the two side posts, the Lord will pass over the door, and will not suffer the destroyer to come in.—Ex. 12: 23.*

The blood of the paschal lamb was publicly sprinkled on the doorposts and lintels of the Israelites' houses. Antitypically that not only means a public confession of Jesus' blood as Jehovah's provided redemptive price for mankind, but also signifies to the remnant that all of that class are Judeans, that is, praisers of Jehovah, and are subject to the orders of Jehovah's Vindicator, the Greater Moses; and further, that the day of God's vengeance is here, which vengeance shortly will be exercised in the destruction of Satan's firstborn at Armageddon. Therefore the blood was both a public declaration and a testimony of approaching destruction upon Jehovah's enemies. This truth Jehovah's witnesses, his firstborn yet on the earth, must declare, because it is an expression of his vengeance. W 3/15/34

**March 31** (89)

*But ye have approached unto Zion's mountain, and . . . unto the spirits of righteous ones made perfect.*  
—Heb. 12: 22, 23, Roth.

The spirit-begotten ones are the ones justified by Jesus' blood, and in addition thereto the remnant are now brought under the robe of righteousness. (Isa. 61: 10) They are 'arrayed in fine linen, which is the righteousness [the righteous acts] of the saints'. (Rev. 19: 8) The "righteous ones", therefore, are the 'saints gathered unto the Lord' and who have come to unity of the faith and knowledge, "unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ." (Eph. 4: 13, 14; Ps. 50: 5) Thus the words of description, to wit, "the spirits of righteous ones made perfect" or perfected, identify the remnant gathered to the temple unto the Lord. These are the ones toward whom the new covenant is inaugurated or dedicated. W 5/15/34

**April 1**

(337)

*Cry aloud, spare not; lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and shew my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins.—Isa. 58: 1.*

Jehovah made curses and blessings very prominent in the covenant made in Moab. This shows that Jehovah would bring to those in line for the kingdom a full knowledge of the consequences of whichever course they might choose to take, and that he would also make plain to the faithful the subject concerning the "evil servant" class as well as that of the "faithful and wise servant" class, disclosing the sharp contrast between them. Not only that, but that he would cause the sins of the "evil servant" class to be boldly pronounced or cried out by his faithful witnesses on earth. The great Judge, Christ Jesus, now sits in judgment. Those gathered unto him and into the kingdom covenant participate, in this, that they announce the judgments already written. W 7/1/34

**April 2**

(44)

*I will cause you to pass under the rod, and I will bring you into the bond of the covenant: and I will purge out from among you the rebels.—Ezek. 20: 37, 38.*

During the World War, particularly the years 1917 and 1918, spiritual Israel was in a wilderness condition. Fiery trials came upon those consecrated to God. A separating work followed. Passing through that affliction those found faithful to the Lord up to that time were taken into the bonds of the new covenant. They passed under the rod of kingly authority of Christ Jesus who had been sent out from Zion to rule and who was now at the temple for the purging of the "sons of Levi". Then Jehovah by Christ Jesus fulfilled his promise to "purge out from among you the rebels, and them that transgress against me: . . . and ye shall know that I am the Lord". (Verse 38) This separating work began and continued until the cleansing of the sanctuary was accomplished. W 6/1/34

**April 3**

(101)

*Take heed, and hearken, O Israel; this day thou art become the people of the Lord thy God. Thou shalt therefore obey the voice of the Lord thy God, and do his commandments and his statutes.—Deut. 27: 9, 10.*

There is no mention made of animal sacrifice and sprinkling of blood at making the covenant in Moab, even though that was the day of the new moon. In the record of Leviticus and Numbers priests, tabernacle and animal sacrifices are made foremost. Not so in the making of the Moab covenant. Faithfulness is the keynote to that covenant in Moab. Sacrificial provisions, which prefigured the ransom sacrifice and atonement work of Christ, would of themselves be insufficient and unavailing for those taken out as a people for Jehovah's name as against their going into captivity to Satan's organization, and into death, unless they were wholly obedient to their vows. They must be faithful, above everything else. W 6/15/34

**April 4**

(326)

*He is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God.—Rom. 2:29.*

The law covenant was made by Jehovah with the natural descendants of Israel, Moses being the glorified mediator. The new covenant was made with Christ Jesus, the glorified Mediator, with and for spiritual Israel. The natural Israelites were a typical people, the antitype of which are those who covenant to do God's will. Such are designated spiritual Israelites. Christ Jesus was by human birth a natural Israelite. The new covenant, however, was made with him after he was made the Head of the spiritual house of Israel. Others were invited into the covenant after they had accepted Christ Jesus as God's promised Seed, and hence after they had become spiritual Israelites. Only those who are begotten of the spirit after exercising faith in the shed blood of Christ Jesus are spiritual Israelites.—Rom. 9: 6, 7. W 4/15/34

**April 5**

(331)

*In that day will I raise up the pavilion of David . . . that they on whom my name hath been called may take possession of the residue of Edom and of all the nations.*

—Amos 9:11, 12, Roth.

The name "David" means "beloved" and pictures Christ Jesus, the beloved Son of God. The tabernacle or dwelling-place of Jehovah God as related to his creatures is Zion, his capital organization, of which Christ Jesus his beloved Son is the Head. "For the Lord hath chosen Zion: he hath desired it for his habitation. This is my rest for ever: here will I dwell; for I have desired it." (Ps. 132:13, 14) Amos' prophecy refers to the fact that, when its fulfilment took place, the Greater David would be in possession of the nations. As it is written concerning Jesus: "Yet have I [Jehovah] set my king upon my holy hill of Zion. Ask of me, and I shall give thee the [nations] for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession."—Ps. 2:6, 8. W 7/15/34

**April 6**

(46)

*But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.—1 Cor. 11:28.*

Those who now properly partake of the Lord's supper as a memorial to Jehovah's name must have an active personal part in the performance of the ten antitypical plagues upon antitypical Egypt, Satan's organization. Each one must participate in proclaiming the message of God in connection with these plagues. The plagues are now in operation, advancing to the great climax of destruction of Satan's firstborn at Armageddon. To partake worthily of the Memorial one must have part in declaring these truths as Christ has commanded. Moses and Aaron declared God's word to the Egyptians, which resulted in the plagues. Moses typified Christ Jesus, and Aaron, his spokesman, represented those of the temple class, the remnant, now on earth, declaring the message of God's vengeance and bearing testimony of his kingdom. W 3/15/34

**April 7**

(93)

*And among the cities which ye shall give unto the Levites, there shall be six cities for refuge, which ye shall appoint for the manslayer, that he may flee thither.*

—Num. 35:6.

These six cities were assigned to those who had been redeemed or purchased by Jehovah in place of Israel's firstborn and who had been assigned exclusively to God's service. (Num. 3: 11-51) The six cities thus appointed picture the organization of Jehovah's anointed ones yet on earth, representing Zion, the holy city, since it is builded up. Such cities of protection symbolized the organization of those who are wholly devoted to God and his temple. There was no other place that the manslayer could find refuge or safety. This is strong proof that the Jonadab class who seek refuge against the day of God's vengeance must find it only in "Jehu's chariot", that is, in the organization of Jehovah, of which organization Christ Jesus is the Head and great High Priest. W 8/1/34

**April 8**

(109)

*The Lord said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.—Gen. 6: 3.*

There was no need for Jehovah to prolong for ever the controversy as to man's integrity, as though man could continue to strive with his Creator and Judge in the same manner that he strives against an adversary at law. But why should God suffer sinful man with no integrity toward Jehovah to continue 120 years longer? It was during that 120 years that he caused a great witness to be given to his name, and at the end of that 120 years he brought about the world's complete destruction, foreshadowing the destruction of the world at Armageddon. In this manner Jehovah shows that he had timed the world's destruction by the flood and that he would allow ample time before that to serve notice on men and their superhuman sons-in-law, the incarnated "sons of God". W 9/1/34

**April 9**

(332)

*It is commanded, O people, nations, and languages, that at what time ye hear the sound of . . . all kinds of music, ye fall down and worship the golden image that Nebuchadnezzar the king hath set up.—Dan. 3:4, 5.*

To refuse to obey the king's command would be a challenge to his supremacy and the legitimacy of the image he erected. Now the question of supremacy is brought to the fore; Satan boldly claims he is supreme; therefore everyone is forced to take his stand either on the Devil's side or on the side of Jehovah and his kingdom. The visible part of Satan's organization today insists that the power of the state is supreme and everyone must submit thereto regardless of whether the rule promulgated is contrary to God's law or not. Those who now stand firm for God and his kingdom and refuse to compromise do thereby declare that this worldly organization ruled by Satan is a fraudulent thing reproaching Jehovah's name. W 10/1/34

**April 10**

(185)

*Behold, Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat.—Luke 22:31.*

Jesus added, to Peter: "But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren." Thus the Lord in guarded language showed that Peter would come through the test successfully and that he could afterwards be of strength to his brethren. This supports the conclusion that Satan makes a desperate attempt to overthrow everyone worthily partaking of the Memorial. Let all such, then, have absolute and complete faith in Jehovah God and Christ Jesus and remain firm and steadfast, regardless of all opposition, and continue to proclaim the name of Jehovah faithfully unto the end. So doing, they may be assured of complete deliverance into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ and be for ever the favored servants of the Most High. W 3/15/34

**April 11** (108)

*The queen spake and said, O king, live for ever; let not thy thoughts trouble thee, . . . let Daniel be called, and he will shew the interpretation.—Dan. 5:10-12.*

Vindication of Jehovah's name was the paramount issue in Daniel's day and is still such. Daniel had been in Babylon for years and had proved himself a faithful and true witness to God's name. He was now of a good old age, and still the Lord would use him to bear testimony. For about 1900 years God has been taking out from the world his church and using such to be his witnesses, and even now, in the old age of the church, in these "last days" the faithful are having greater opportunities of bearing testimony to Jehovah's name. The picture made in connection with Daniel's appearing before the king of Babylon indicates that God's remnant would be given a greater privilege and responsibility to be witnesses to the name of the Most High and to bear testimony before world rulers to God's name and kingdom. W 11/15/34

**April 12** (169)

*Declare in Zion the vengeance of the Lord our God, the vengeance of his temple.—Jer. 50:28.*

This must be done in fulfilment of the divinely given commandment: "Proclaim . . . the day of vengeance of our God." (Isa. 61:2) As Aaron acted as the mouth-piece and proclaimer for Moses (who typified Christ Jesus) in proclaiming God's vengeance against Pharaoh and his organization, even so now those in the covenant with Christ Jesus must likewise proclaim God's vengeance against Satan's firstborn and all of his organization, because they "have the testimony of Jesus Christ" and keep God's commandment. Those who would partake of the Memorial supper and then fail or refuse to obey the commandments to be Jehovah's witnesses would thereby partake unworthily: "For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body."—1 Cor. 11:29. W 3/1/34

**April 13**

(39)

*We sent Moses his servant, and Aaron whom he had chosen. They shewed his signs among them, and wonders in the land of Ham.—Ps. 105: 26, 27.*

Jehovah's primary purpose in sending Moses to Egypt was to place before the Egyptian ruling class, and before the people, the proof that he is the Supreme One. His primary purpose in sending Jesus, the anti-typical Moses, to earth at both his first and his second coming is to place before the creation of the world the proof that Jehovah is the Almighty and that there is none besides him. This he does for his own name's sake, that all may know that life and attending blessings come from God, and from him only. This conclusion is proved by his words to Moses that "the Egyptians shall know that I am Jehovah". (Ex. 7: 5, A.R.V.) Moses was Jehovah's instrument in Egypt to place the evidence before the people. Jesus Christ is his instrument or "hand" by which Jehovah places the evidence before the entire world. W 3/15/34

**April 14**

(269)

*And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel.—Ex. 19: 6.*

This proves that a people was foreshadowed by the Israelites and that such people foreshadowed by the Israelites in the law covenant must prove their faithfulness under the terms of the new covenant in order to become God's holy nation. Addressing that people foreshadowed by the Israelites the inspired apostle says: "Ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people, that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God; which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy." (1 Pet. 2: 9, 10) This holy nation is made up of those who become members of God's royal house of which Christ Jesus is the Head. W 4/1/34

**April 15**

(236)

*Daniel knew that the writing was signed, . . . and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime.—Dan. 6:10.*

Hidden worship by Jehovah's witnesses might be carried on by praying to him and talking secretly to others about his kingdom without even the hierarchy's knowing it. But such hidden worship would be positive evidence of fear of men, and a tacit admission that Jehovah is not supreme and cannot protect and deliver his own. That is exactly what Satan desires to accomplish. The Lord foreknew this and warns that the fear of man leadeth into a snare but the fear of the Lord tendeth to life. (Prov. 29:25; 19:23) To be a true worshiper of Almighty God one must obey his commandment, "Ye are my witnesses"; that is, you must make known to others that your trust is in Jehovah and that he is the only source of life and the one to whom all proper petition can be presented with certainty of having the same answered. W 12/1/34

**April 16**

(294)

*As often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death till he come.—1 Cor. 11:26.*

Jesus' death in the place of the sinner, and his faithfulness unto death, were not merely to furnish the redemptive price for man, but also to prove his own qualifications to be the vindicator of Jehovah's name. Being thus perfected, Christ Jesus became Jehovah's "high priest for ever" and the vindicator of his name. The greatest thing to be kept in memory is the name of Jehovah, and Paul intimated that at the coming of Jesus to the temple this important truth would clearly be understood. By partaking of the "Lord's supper" until his coming to the temple of Jehovah his faithful disciples have shown forth the Lord's death; but now these faithful ones gathered by the Lord Jesus unto himself are 'drinking the fruit of the vine with him new', and all are rejoicing and praising the name of Jehovah and must do so for ever. W 3/1/34

### **April 17 Memorial Date (20)**

*For we, being many, are one bread, and one body; for we are all partakers of that one bread.—1 Cor. 10:17.*

Others may engage in proclaiming the message of the Kingdom, but it is those who partake of the death of Christ Jesus who are the ones that ultimately live with him. Those who suffer the reproaches that reproached him by reason of being Jehovah's faithful witness, even to the end, are the ones that will ultimately reign with him. Jehovah gave to Jesus the privilege and honor of being His vindicator at cost of his human life. All who are with him in that vindication must likewise die sacrificially, as Jesus did, faithful unto the end. All of such capital organization are "one bread and one body". The breaking of the bread and the drinking of the cup show forth that all who do so are one with Christ Jesus, in unity with him as members of his body and therefore in the temple. Such, therefore, properly partake of the emblems of the Memorial. W 3/15/34

### **April 18 (323)**

*Whose voice then shook the earth; but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven.—Heb. 12:26.*

What came to pass at Mount Sinai was typical. It foreshadowed a shaking which is a searching judgment process upon those who have covenanted to do God's will and which takes place at the time Christ Jesus sits in judgment as a refiner, and at which time there is a great shake-up amongst the creatures who have made a consecration to do God's will. In this shaking some are cast away, while others are retained. Just such a shaking process began about 1918 and has progressed from and after that date, which marks the Lord's coming to the temple and the beginning of judgment and the progress of his judgment. At the time of this shaking the lawless ones are gathered out and cast away, which casting-away work is done by the Lord acting by and through his angels. W 5/15/34

**April 19**

(186)

*When Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people.—Heb. 9:19.*

Sprinkling the book with the blood shows that the laws and commandments of God set forth in his Word, the Bible, are now living and in force and effect toward the remnant, his witnesses, and that they must obey his commandments delivered by the Greater Moses. The blood sprinkled upon the people would prove that one must first be in the covenant of sacrifice in order to receive the privileges and benefits of the new covenant. Those, such as Paul, who died faithful prior to the Lord's coming, actually shed their blood in death, but they must wait until the Lord's appearing at the temple to receive the crown of life, at which time the new covenant is inaugurated. After that special witness work must be done to Jehovah's name by his remnant in the earth. W 5/1/34

**April 20**

(325)

*Ye shall be named the priests of Jehovah; men shall call you the ministers of our God.—Isa. 61:6, A.R.V.*

Those brought into the temple and toward whom the new covenant was inaugurated have been anointed; which means that they are commissioned to do a specific service to the name Jehovah; as it is written: "The spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach." Concerning this anointed company Jehovah says: "But ye shall be named the priests of Jehovah." Prior thereto, particularly during the humiliating conditions that existed from 1917 to 1919, God's people on earth suffered much shame; but his anger being turned away from them, now he says: "For your shame ye shall have double [a double portion of the spirit or divine favor, such as received by Elisha], and for confusion they shall rejoice in their portion; therefore in their land they shall possess the double."—Verse 7. W 6/1/34

**April 21**

(53)

*This thing commanded I them, saying, Obey my voice, and I will be your God, and ye shall be my people; and walk ye in all the ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you.—Jer. 7:23.*

Jehovah had selected the Israelites as his people to go into Canaan. Now the all-important thing to them was faithful obedience to the voice of Jehovah. This proves that those taken into the kingdom covenant must be obedient to the commandments of the Greater Moses and that obedience is better than sacrifice. Jehovah condescends to assure those in the covenant of his own faithfulness. Faithfulness is required of all those taken into the covenant. Therefore those in the kingdom covenant are admonished: "Be ye holy; for I am holy." Those who are in the covenant for the kingdom are righteous or just by virtue of being in Christ and having received the robe of righteousness, and "the just shall live by his faith" and faithfulness.—Hab. 2: 4. W 6/15/34

**April 22**

(159)

*Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: . . . Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord.—Mal. 3:1; 4:5.*

In due time Jehovah directed Christ Jesus, the Greater Elijah, to do a preparatory work, to prepare a people who would see and appreciate the kingdom. In doing this work the Lord used the consecrated who engaged in an ambassadorial or witness work, which had to do with restoring the truth to the followers of Christ Jesus. This preparatory work had to be done before Jehovah's Messenger came to the temple. It was not a preparing of a people for heaven, even though the ones maintaining their integrity and continuing faithful find their final reward in heaven. The work is preparing the people for Jehovah's name, which people must do a specific witness work after being taken out of the world and prepared. W 7/15/34

**April 23**

(95)

*Take heed, and hearken, O Israel; this day thou art become the people of the Lord thy God.—Deut. 27:9.*

It is when Jehovah's saints are gathered together unto him at the temple and when the new covenant is inaugurated toward them, and hence when Zion has brought forth her 'other children', that the remnant of God's people on earth are brought into the kingdom covenant. This was foreshadowed by the words spoken above to Israel in Moab. The people taken out from among the nations and taken into the kingdom covenant are taken in to accomplish his purpose, to wit, that they may be used in connection with the vindication of his name. He bringing these into the temple, the garments of salvation and the robe of righteousness are laid upon the obedient ones that they may be fully identified as God's people in his righteous organization, gathered unto him according to his purpose: "that he may establish thee to day for a people unto himself."—Deut. 29:12, 13. W 7/1/34

**April 24**

(33)

*Every one that killeth any person unawares may flee thither. The revenger of blood himself shall slay the murderer, when he meeleteth him.—Num. 35:15, 19.*

Jesus bought the human race with his precious blood and is therefore the Redeemer, and as Redeemer of man he is clothed with authority from Jehovah his Father to give life to the human race. He is Jehovah's official executioner and delivers justice by repaying like with like upon the bloodguilty. He will certainly meet or overtake all of the bloodguilty ones at Armageddon in the battle of the great day of God Almighty and will slay all such as are not in the cities of refuge. The provision of God's law was, "that the manslayer die not, until he stand before the congregation in judgment." (Num. 35:12) All other manslayers must be executed. The cities of refuge were prepared as a way of escape. The antitypical cities of refuge are now set up. W 8/1/34

**April 25** (93)

*Fall down and worship the golden image that Nebuchadnezzar the king hath set up; and whoso falleth not down and worshippeth shall the same hour be cast into the midst of a burning fiery furnace.—Dan. 3:5, 6.*

Satan and his agents can only "kill the body" God's faithful witnesses know this; they know that the "furnace" or fiery crucible is employed for the purpose of breaking down their integrity toward God and thus to lead them to complete destruction. By the Lord's grace they remain true and faithful to Jehovah, and he saves them. The enemy attempts to destroy Jehovah's witnesses, and may succeed in killing the organism of some, but God permits such to come upon his people now to test their integrity, and his promised protection is to those who remain faithful to him. His Word makes it sure that he will have some of the remnant on earth at the final show-down and, though some may be killed by Satan's crowd, the remnant as a class will survive and persist. W 10/1/34

**April 26** (312)

*Then was Daniel brought in before the king. And the king spake and said unto Daniel, Art thou that Daniel which art . . . of Judah?—Dan. 5:13.*

That question required Daniel to identify himself as a Jew, that is, one of Jehovah's people who gives praise to Jehovah's name and who was at that time in Satan's world, Babylon, but not a part thereof. Correspondingly, in A.D. 1931, Jehovah caused his faithful people to come up before the world rulers and to boldly confess to their identity, that is, that they are those who give praise and service to Jehovah and therefore they are true Judeans. Representatively, in a body, they accepted Jehovah's gracious gift, to wit, the new name which he had revealed to them, and from that time forward they have been known as Jehovah's witnesses. The clergy's miserable failure to tell the people the truth makes it necessary for God to employ the remnant. W 11/15/34

**April 27**

(266)

*The sons of God . . . took them wives of all which they chose. . . . He that is married careth for the things that are of the world.—Gen. 6:2; 1 Cor. 7:33.*

Falling to the subtle influence and false reasoning of Satan, the "sons of God" doubtless adopted a line of reasoning like that of those now composing the "prisoner" class, who reason that they can mix with the world and at the same time serve God. Many men and women have consecrated their lives to God and have, contrary to his will, mixed up with the world, reasoning that they could do so and at the same time serve God and uplift the world; but such a course does not result in uplifting the world and does no honor to Jehovah. Doubtless the "sons of God" were induced to reason along the same line; thus they were entrapped. The "prisoner" class now reason that they can disregard God's Word and stay in the religious systems, and thus serve God and man. W 9/1/34

**April 28**

(295)

*He turned their waters into blood.—Ps. 105:29.*

Egypt depended upon the waters of the Nile as a means of carrying on her commerce. Turning the waters into blood represented death. Satan claimed that he had made the river Nile for himself, meaning that this was his possession. (Ezek. 29:1-3) The people of the world, and many who have consecrated themselves to the Lord, have been induced heretofore to believe that commerce is vitally and essentially necessary to sustain mankind's life. In recent years God's covenant people have come to learn that commerce was organized and has been carried on by Satan as a means of controlling the people and turning them away from Jehovah God. This sign or wonder was performed before the Israelites, and thus showed that God's covenant people must first learn the meaning of commerce and that it is the institution of Satan, and then they must declare the same before the rulers and the people. W 3/1/34

**April 29**

(273)

*See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven.—Heb. 12:25.*

The shaking that took place at Mount Sinai at the inauguration of the law covenant foreshadowed the shaking, sifting and refining that take place at the time the new covenant is inaugurated by the Greater Moses. The apostle Paul here compares the responsibility of those in the new covenant with those in the law covenant. The Jews refused to hear and obey the words spoken by Moses, and they did not escape thereafter. Says the apostle: "Much more shall not we escape if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven." Now Christ Jesus, the Greater Moses, speaks from heaven from the temple, and those in the new covenant who do not obey him shall certainly not escape punishment.—Acts 3:23. W 5/15/34

**April 30**

(42)

*His windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed . . . as he did aforetime.—Dan. 6:10.*

Thus Daniel pictured the remnant now on earth with their hearts and faces turned toward Jehovah's organization, his kingdom, and showing that their chief purpose is to have part in vindicating Jehovah's holy name. They will remain true to Jehovah and his kingdom regardless of consequences that might come upon them at the enemy's hands. Like faithful ones of old they now say concerning Jehovah and his organization: "If I forget thee, O Jerusalem, let my right hand forget her cunning." Regardless of opposition and persecution they will continue to worship Almighty God as he has commanded them in the same way that Jesus and his faithful apostles did aforetime, to wit, by publicly going from house to house and preaching the gospel.—Acts 20:20. W 12/1/34

**May 1** (157)

*For I will proclaim the name of Jehovah: ascribe ye greatness unto our God.—Deut. 32:3, A.R.V.*

The judgment song of Moses at the making of the covenant in Moab puts forward Jehovah's name and shows that it must be published abroad by Jehovah's faithful witnesses. Jehovah delivered his captive people in 1919 from Satan's organization. This was foreshadowed by the Moab covenant. God's covenant people had been scattered, ill-used, and caused to cease from their work, and this was done at the hands of the enemy. Jehovah did not deliver them for his remnant's sake, but for his own name's sake, to forestall the enemy's reproach against that holy name. As it is written : "I said, I would scatter them afar, I would make the remembrance of them to cease from among men ; were it not that I feared the provocation of the enemy, lest their adversaries should judge amiss, lest they should say, Our hand is exalted, and Jehovah hath not done all this."—Deut. 32: 26, 27, A.R.V. W 6/15/34

**May 2** (148)

*If any man hate his neighbour, and . . . smite him mortally that he die, and fleeth into one of these cities: then the elders of his city shall send and fetch him thence, and deliver him into the hand of the avenger of blood.—Deut. 19: 11, 12.*

The elders of God's organization are those who have been brought into the temple and anointed and who are therefore elders in fact, or mature ones in Christ. These shall not shun to declare the truth concerning God's enemies. They must not compromise in any way with deliberate manslayers or persecutors who are of Satan's organization or try to shield them, nor must they have any sympathy for them as against the execution of God's vengeance upon them. They must be in full heart accord with God's determination to execute vengeance upon them. They must be consistent and pray God that his declared purpose to destroy the wicked shall be carried into operation. W 8/1/34

**May 3**

(292)

*Christ . . . preached unto the spirits in prison; which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing.—1 Pet. 3: 18-20.*

Those "spirits in prison" were prior to the flood the ones Genesis six designates as the "sons of God". Their wrongdoing consisted in leaving their assigned duties in God's organization and marrying daughters of men and thus devoting themselves to that which was in disobedience of God's law concerning them. They did not heed Noah's preaching, and when the flood came they found there was no protection for them regardless of whether or not they desired to return to God's organization at that time. After the flood came, which taught these disobedient spirits the supreme power of Jehovah and showed the vindication of his word and name, such spirit creatures would be restrained (imprisoned) by Satan and his wicked allies to prevent them from breaking away. W 9/15/34

**May 4**

(111)

*For what was impossible to the Law—powerless as it was because it acted through frail humanity—God effected. Sending his own Son . . . —Rom. 8:3, Weym.*

The failure of the law covenant was not because of any fault with the law, but because of the fault of the Jewish nation. Hence its failure made it necessary to make a new covenant in place and stead of the old, that God might have a people for his name. "For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. For finding fault with them [Jews], he saith, Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant." (Heb. 8: 7, 8) Neither the old law covenant nor the new covenant is made for the purpose of saving men. The purpose is to gather together a people for Jehovah's name. The faithful ones thereof he promises shall have part in vindicating his name, the which proves his side of the controversy. W 4/1/34

**May 5** (63)

*And Aaron stretched out his hand over the waters of Egypt; and the frogs came up, and covered the land of Egypt.—Ex. 8:6.*

The hand stretched out holding the rod (manifestly Moses' rod) represented and pictured the power and authority of Jehovah God conferred upon Christ, the Greater Moses, and by him upon the earthly members of his organization, the servant class, who bear the message or testimony of Jehovah before the rulers and before the people. The frogs here particularly represent the agitators amongst the common people who suggest divers and numerous remedies for the world's salvation. The authoritative exercise by Jehovah's servants of the divine power and commission in delivering the message of notice and warning to the enemy organization exposes these many so-called "remedies" for the human race. The plague of frogs antitypically began on Satan's organization from the year 1927 and onward. W 3/1/34

**May 6** (209)

*And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob.—Rom. 11:26.*

At the time the Deliverer Christ Jesus comes out from Zion ungodliness is taken away from all spiritual Israelites so that then "all Israel", that is, spiritual Israel, shall be saved. He turns away ungodliness "from Jacob", that is, from the people taken out for Jehovah's name, and it is then that all spiritual Israel are delivered, being gathered unto God as a people for himself. In 1918 Christ Jesus, "the messenger of the covenant," suddenly appeared at the temple of Jehovah for judgment and purged the "sons of Levi", which resulted in turning away of ungodliness from Jacob, that is, God's covenant people. This means the taking away of ungodly things, as formalism, creature worship, etc., from the remnant and permitting them to see and to appreciate Jehovah's purpose. W 4/15/34

**May 7**

(189)

*Moses took the blood, and sprinkled it on the people, and said, Behold the blood of the covenant, which the Lord hath made with you.—Ex. 24:8.*

In this ceremony water, scarlet wool and hyssop were also used. (Heb 9:19) Water well represents the truth concerning Jehovah's name and purpose, both of which have been revealed to the remnant since the Lord's coming to the temple. The wool, being of royal or Kingdom color and being of a sheep or lamb, refers to the royal Lamb of God who mediates and inaugurates the new covenant in his own blood. He, the Greater Moses, is now upon his throne and reigns. Hyssop symbolizes cleansing of the "sons of Levi" at the temple by a mediator, and at the inauguration of the new covenant. Sprinkling the remnant of spiritual Israel with blood shows that the life merit of the sacrificed victim, Jesus Christ, has been applied to them and the covenant has been made firm unto them and they must strictly obey its Mediator. W 5/1/34

**May 8**

(23)

*For the mountains shall depart, and the hills be removed; but my kindness shall not depart from thee, neither shall the covenant of my peace be removed, saith the Lord that hath mercy on thee.—Isa. 54:10.*

After being brought into the temple, and hence following the inauguration of the new covenant, Jehovah's faithful remnant enter into peace; therefore the inauguration of the new covenant includes with them a "covenant of peace". The new covenant has been in force and effect throughout the period of sacrifice, but, it now being inaugurated at the building up of Zion, the "covenant of my peace" began. The nations of the earth ["the mountains"] are greatly shaken and are disintegrating at the present time, and the high places ["the hills"] in the earthly governments are being shaken down, and are in great distress; but peace is with them that are of Jehovah's organization. God's peace remains with his faithful ones. W 6/1/34

**May 9**

(304)

*This word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain.*

*—Heb. 12:27.*

In connection with the covenant's inauguration the apostle quotes Haggai's prophecy (2:6,7) and thereby definitely fixes the time of the inauguration of the new covenant, to wit, when the 'Desired One' comes to the temple for judgment. Then follows the shaking among those who were once in line for the kingdom. This latter shaking is for the express purpose of removing every one in line for the kingdom who is not proved faithful. The apostle declares that 'those which cannot be shaken' are the faithful ones whom God has perfected and has taken out and placed in commission, and who continue as his witnesses, and who participate in the vindication of his name. Such are the ones in line for the kingdom. To these the kingdom interests are committed by the Lord. W 5/15/34

**May 10**

(321)

*Certain Chaldeans came near, and accused the Jews. They spake and said . . . these men, O king, have not regarded thee; they serve not thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up.—Dan. 3:8-12.*

As the clergy accused the three Hebrews in Daniel's time, even so now that same class accuse Jehovah's witnesses. Jehovah's witnesses do not serve the Devil, nor regard the things demanded by Satan's organization which contravene God's law. They will have Jehovah first, last, and all the time. These faithful witnesses lay responsibility for the present world distress at Satan's door, where it properly belongs. They refuse to have any part in the devilish formalism of worldly worship. They serve and worship Jehovah God. They know that they cannot receive the Lord's protection unless they are faithful to him. They cannot be partakers of the Lord's table and of the Devil's table at the same time. W 10/1/34

**May 11** (34)

*Moses therefore wrote this song the same day, and taught it the children of Israel.—Deut. 31:22.*

That song sung upon the plains of Moab foretold a far more wonderful song to be sung at the induction of God's chosen people into the kingdom covenant. That more wonderful song is now being sung. The words of the song of Moses proceeded from Jehovah, and Moses, acting as his mouthpiece, spoke these words: "Give ear, ye heavens, and I will speak; and let the earth hear the words of my mouth. My doctrine shall drop as the rain, my speech shall distil as the dew; as the small rain upon the tender grass." That song emphasized that the chief purpose of the covenant is the vindication of Jehovah's name; that his name must be known and exalted in all the universe. The song ascribes all goodness and loving-kindness to Jehovah, and then says: "For I will proclaim the name of the Lord; ascribe ye greatness unto our God."—Deut. 32: 1-3, R.V. W 6/15/34

**May 12** (193)

*Thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God, . . . Thou shalt not eat any abominable thing.—Deut. 14:2, 3.*

Jehovah has spread a feast for his royal organization, and the faithful remnant are caused to sit with Christ Jesus at his table and partake of that feast, and hence must partake only of clean food that comes from the Lord's table, and not be found seeking after the things of men. (Deut. 14: 1-21 ) They must faithfully abide by the terms of the everlasting covenant concerning the sanctity of life. Among them there must be no usury, no injustice, no cheating, nor acts causing unfruitfulness. There must be no oppression or defrauding among them, but generosity toward the poor and helpfulness one toward another. (Deut. 25: 11-16; 22: 1-8) Those in the kingdom covenant must not confuse their identity, nor be effeminate, nor wear garments to attract attention to themselves. They must give glory to Jehovah.—Deut. 22: 5-12. W 7/1/34

**May 13** (244)

*After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, . . . that the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called.—Acts 15: 16, 17.*

The Lord announces what shall immediately follow the setting up or restoring of "the tabernacle of David", meaning God's kingdom organization, to wit: "that the residue of men might seek after the Lord." The "residue", or remnant, undoubtedly means those found faithful at the beginning of the temple judgment and who are made the servant of God to bear testimony to his name. Then says the prophet: "And all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called," manifestly meaning all who were brought to the truth and into the temple after the beginning of judgment at the temple. The people for Jehovah's name include the "remnant" and all who subsequently come into his organization upon whom he puts his name, all of whom constitute his faithful witnesses on earth. W 7/15/34

**May 14** (331)

*Thus they gave to the children of Aaron the priest Hebron with her suburbs, to be a city of refuge for the slayer.—Josh. 21: 13.*

Such sons of God as are found faithful at the temple judgment by Christ Jesus at the time he builds up Zion are taken into the covenant for the kingdom, and these become a part of God's royal organization symbolized by a city. (Rev. 21: 1, 2) The refuge or protection of such is in God's organization under Christ, in the secret place of the Most High: "He that dwelleth in the secret place of the Most High, shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty. I will say of the Lord, He is my refuge." These form a part of the city and are not the ones that flee to the city of refuge after Zion is builded up. For these followers of Christ in the temple to gain eternal life they must abide in Christ, faithful, and perform their obligation. They are of the priesthood under Christ. W 8/1/34

**May 15** (133)

*Christ . . . made alive in the spirit; in which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison.*

—1 Pet. 3:18, 19, A.R.V.

For three and one-half years he was preaching the truth by word of mouth and by his consistent and constant devotion to Jehovah. Jesus, always in Jehovah's organization and in his favor, refused to yield to temptations presented by Satan. Amidst all the persecutions heaped upon him by Satan he remained faithful and true to Jehovah. This, together with his continued course of consistent action unto death, and his being raised out of death, was the manner in which he preached to the spirits in prison. These imprisoned spirits found themselves there because of failing to be faithful in their service to God while in his organization. Now they saw the result that comes for unfaithfulness and also the result to those who are faithful. Jesus' conduct preached in favor of God's side and against Satan's side. W 9/15/34

**May 16** (52)

*That Daniel, which is . . . of Judah, regardeth not thee, O king, nor the decree that thou hast signed, but maketh his petition three times a day.—Dan. 6:13.*

The state, or earthly government, is not a mediator between God and man. Jehovah is above all; his law is supreme and his people will obey it. The divine rule is not subject to change. Jehovah has commanded his anointed to go and bear testimony to the people by telling them the truth that Jehovah is God and Satan's organization is God's enemy and shall soon be destroyed. To obey Jehovah's law the faithful anointed cannot hide themselves by declining to openly testify to his name. They must not cease to bear the kingdom fruits before men and to pray for the increase of his kingdom interests and for destruction of Satan's rule. In faithfully performing their divinely given commission the remnant know they are putting themselves in a position of jeopardy at men's hands. W 12/1/34

**May 17**

(98)

*How he had wrought his signs in Egypt, . . . and had turned their rivers into blood.—Ps. 78: 43, 44.*

The turning of the water into blood foreshadowed a message of truth being declared in the presence of Satan's visible agents, as well as to the invisible part of his organization. The fulfilment of the prophetic picture began at the convention of God's people at Columbus in July 1924, when public declaration was made that the commercial giants, the principal ones of this world's ecclesiastical systems, constitute the chief rulers or representatives of Satan on earth that dominate and oppress the people. This testimony continually given since then by Jehovah's witnesses, and the Scriptural proof submitted in support thereof, has constituted and continues to constitute a great plague upon the organization of Satan. His visible representatives have no answer to these pointed truths, and hence are tormented by hearing them. W 3/1/34

**May 18**

(326)

*He is the mediator of the new testament, that . . . they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.—Heb. 9: 15.*

Jesus is the offspring and seed of the Abrahamic covenant, which takes precedence over both the law covenant and the new covenant. A mediator's being provided for the new covenant shows that the purpose of the covenant is to bring others into it to act with Christ Jesus and under his direct supervision. The new covenant was made more than two thousand years after the Abrahamic covenant, yet it could not take the place of the Abrahamic covenant, the seed of which is the means of blessing all families of earth. The new covenant is not a covenant of blessing or giving of life; it is a means of providing a people to bear testimony to Jehovah's name, and who may have a part in its vindication. The mere fact of providing a mediator shows that others would be joined with Christ in vindicating God's name. W 4/1/34

**May 19**

(40)

*And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them  
that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the Lord.*

—Isa. 59:20.

The one coming to Zion, God's organization, is the Redeemer Christ Jesus. The time must come when there would come out of Zion the Deliverer, and that came when Christ Jesus appeared at the temple. At that time the prophecy applies: "There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob." (Rom. 11:26) Otherwise stated, the Lord Jesus Christ at the temple turned away such ungodliness as "character development", formalism, ceremonies, creature worship, which is the "sin of Samaria", the pyramid hobby, submission to political and commercial powers as though they were the "higher powers". That being the time of cleansing the "sons of Levi", the turning away of ungodliness from the spiritual Israel, then all such faithful ones shall be saved. W 4/15/34

**May 20**

(200)

*Then went up Moses, and Aaron, Nadab, and Abihu,  
and seventy of the elders of Israel; and they saw the  
God of Israel—Ex. 24:9, 10.*

Those who accompanied Moses seemed to bear relation to the seventy elders whom Jehovah commanded Moses thereafter to gather unto himself to assist him in bearing the burdens of his office. (Num. 11:16, 17, 24-30) Those seventy selected by Jehovah were by him enabled and qualified to assist Moses in administering the law covenant. This finds a correspondence in the office of the "able ministers of the new [covenant]". Concerning himself and his fellow disciples the apostle wrote: "God . . . hath made us able ministers of the new [covenant]; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life." (2 Cor. 3:5, 6) For what purpose? Manifestly, as stated by the apostle, "for the perfecting of the saints, . . . till we all come in the unity of the faith." W 5/1/34

**May 21**

(144)

*Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with reverence and godly fear.—Heb. 12:28.*

The kingdom cannot be shaken or moved, and those who with Christ Jesus ultimately inherit the kingdom cannot be shaken out. It is the kingdom that will vindicate Jehovah's name; hence all who are of the kingdom must stand firm and steadfast. That kingdom has now come and the interests on earth thereof have been committed to the "faithful and wise servant" class. Hence the apostle, addressing those toward whom the new covenant is now inaugurated, and to whom these kingdom interests are committed, says: "Let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably." They must have grace and gracious words upon their lips, serving God with pureness of heart. Such faithful ones serve God "with reverence and godly fear" because "our God is a consuming fire". W 5/15/34

**May 22**

(89)

*Darius the Median took the kingdom, being about three-score and two years old. So this Daniel prospered in the reign of Darius, and in the reign of Cyrus the Persian.*

—Dan. 5:31; 6:28.

Darius began reigning as world ruler at the fall of Babylon, picturing the fall of Satan's organization. He there pictures Jehovah, the First Ruler in the great universal kingdom. Cyrus, the second ruler, pictures Jehovah's "heir of all things", Christ Jesus. He is the One whom Jehovah associates with himself in the destruction of Satan's organization. At Babylon's fall Darius the Mede, rather than Cyrus, is made foremost, which would seem to say that as the result of the battle of Armageddon Jehovah the great King, who is the Supreme One, is made known to all creation that lives, and that his name is fully vindicated, and he is seen to be above every creature. During Christ's thousand-year reign Jehovah rules over all his organization throughout the universe. W 11/15-12/15/34

**May 23**

(210)

*Vengeance is mine, and recompense, at the time when their foot shall slide.—Deut. 32: 35, A.R.V.*

The song of Moses in the plains of Moab tells in brief concerning Jehovah's judgment and informs his covenant people how they have violated their covenant. Then speaking of his justice and judgment Jehovah reminds his people that vengeance (that is, vindication of his name) belongs to him. "For Jehovah will judge his people." (Vs. 36, A.R.V.) The prophetic song then shows that Jehovah will execute this judgment by his glittering "sword", that is, by him whom he has appointed as the Judge of all things and the Vindicator of his great and holy name. (Vs. 41) This song of Moses corresponds exactly and runs parallel with the "song of Moses the servant of God and the song of the Lamb", sung when Zion is builded up and when the remnant are taken into the covenant for the kingdom.—Rev. 15: 2, 3. W 6/15/34

**May 24**

(286)

*When all Israel is come to appear before the Lord thy God in the place which he shall choose, thou shalt read this law before all Israel in their hearing.*

—Deut. 31: 11.

At the time of entering into the covenant by sacrifice, each one agreed to obey God's will or command. This fact must be kept constantly before the attention of his people. This is made sure and mandatory by the Lord's words spoken in Moab. (Deut. 6: 6-9) The covenant made in Moab required that the terms and rules thereof must be read publicly to the Israelites in the place (organization) chosen by Jehovah. Thus is foretold the necessity that the rules concerning the covenant for the kingdom be kept constantly before God's people that they may learn the requirements thereof. "Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip."—Heb. 2: 1. W 7/1/34

**May 25**

(228)

*Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.—Matt. 17:11.*

This restoration work was not a work of restoring or setting up God's kingdom, but a restoring to the faithful of that which had once existed and which had been lost, to wit, the truths of and concerning the kingdom. In the time of that preparatory work the false doctrines of the trinity and eternal torment were completely taken away and it was seen that there is but one true and almighty God and one Lord and Savior, Christ Jesus, who is the King. But the great revelation of prophecy, not being a restoration work, is given to God's people after the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple and after the gathering of the faithful ones to himself at the temple. Since then the faithful have learned that there is a difference between the work of the church foreshadowed by Elijah and that foreshadowed by Elisha. W 7/15/34

**May 26**

(249)

*If thou shalt keep all these commandments . . . to love the Lord thy God, and to walk ever in his ways; then shalt thou add three cities more.—Deut. 19:9.*

Now, since the Lord's coming to the temple, those in "Christendom" who form no part thereof, but who are of good will and have a desire to serve God and his righteous government, must find a haven of refuge in the city (that is, the organization) that is wholly devoted to Jehovah and his service. He has laid upon his witnesses at the present time an obligation concerning this class who desire to do right. That obligation cannot be side-stepped or ignored. That obligation is to carry to people of good will the kingdom message informing them of God's provision made for those who seek to know and to serve him. They must give notice and warning to the people, that those of good will may act intelligently and that they may bear their own responsibility before God. W 8/15/34

May 27

(12)

*The Nephilim were in the earth in those days, and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them: the same were the mighty men.—Gen. 6: 4, A.R.V.*

Doubtless the nephilim were the very ones, together with Satan, who induced the "sons of God" to leave their proper place in Jehovah's service and seek pleasure, and this to turn those "sons of God" away from Jehovah that they might receive his disapproval and at the same time bring greater reproach on his name. Those "mighty men", the offspring of the "sons of God", were not called nephilim, but are termed, according to the Hebrew, *gibborim*. In the great deluge that came upon the earth the *gibborim* were destroyed, but there is no Scriptural evidence that either the "sons of God" or the nephilim were destroyed. On the contrary, the evidence shows that they are yet alive. W 9/1/34

May 28

(9)

*Nebuchadnezzar spake and said unto them, Is it true, O Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego, do not ye serve my gods, nor worship the golden image?—Dan. 3: 14.*

It is true that Jehovah's witnesses refuse to conform to the political religions promulgated and practiced by the earthly, worldly leaders, and hence they do not bow down to the "image of gold". Unwilling to compromise with the Devil, and to bring reproach upon Jehovah's name, God's faithful remnant hate the Devil's gilded organization, represented by the golden image, because God hates it. Jehovah's witnesses are for God and his kingdom, and gladly say: "Therefore I esteem all thy precepts concerning all things to be right; and I hate every false way. I hate and abhor lying; but thy law do I love." (Ps. 119: 128, 163) Satan's powers, including his visible agents, reproach Jehovah's name. Jehovah hates them, and those who are on Jehovah's side likewise hate them. W 10/1/34

**May 29**

(86)

*For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them.—Rom. 10: 5.*

The Lord declared: "Ye shall therefore keep my statutes, and my judgments; which if a man do, he shall live in them; I am [Jehovah]." (Lev. 18:5) God's promise here is that the man in the covenant who should obey the Lord's statutes and judgments would thus live in them and be maintaining his integrity and thus vindicate Jehovah's name, as against Satan's challenge to God to produce such a man. Obedience to the terms of the covenant would prove the qualification of the man to be the vindicator of Jehovah's name when the time should arrive for the issue to be finally settled. Jesus, because of his faithfulness in keeping God's law, and proving his obedience under suffering, thereby demonstrated his qualification to be the vindicator of Jehovah's name. W 4/1/34

**May 30**

(64)

*Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.—Acts 3: 19.*

Manifestly the time here mentioned is the time when Jehovah turns his face toward and gives attention to building up Zion. "When the Lord shall build up Zion, he shall appear in his glory." (Ps. 102:16) He appears at Zion in the representative capacity of his great High Priest, Christ Jesus; hence it is written: "And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you." (Acts 3:20) The words, "that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come," manifestly have reference to the refining and cleansing work performed by Jesus at the temple in order that the cleansed ones might offer unto the Lord an offering in righteousness. (Mal. 3:3) Following that cleansing work there comes great refreshing to the cleansed ones. W 7/15/34

**May 31**

(306)

*And Moses cried unto the Lord because of the frogs which he had brought against Pharaoh. And . . . the frogs died out of the houses.—Ex. 8: 12, 13.*

The dying of the frogs does not mean that Jehovah's witnesses stopped proclaiming the message of truth, because Jehovah commands them to continue their work ; but it does seem to say that the reasonable people begin to see that the worldly croakers have no real means of bringing blessings to the people and they cease giving heed to them. The message of God's kingdom published in 1928 specially pointed out that all attempts of government by agitation and agitators must fail because only God's kingdom under Christ can bring what is the desire of the people. The message of truth therefore angers Satan's organization, the members of which harden their hearts. Further testimony of notice and warning must continue, which will plague Satan's organization. W 3/1/34

**June 1**

(149)

*God . . . also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for . . . the spirit giveth life.—2 Cor. 3: 5, 6.*

Not every one who is begotten of the holy spirit is a minister of the new covenant, but only those who are brought to the point of maturity in Christ, which constitutes them elders in fact, not by the election of men, but by the spirit of the Lord. Not until brethren in the church who seek to lead should become elders in fact, that is, come to unity in the spirit, could they become the able ministers of the new covenant. Whichever those in the church follow human leaders and ignore the Word of the Lord trouble is certain to result. The time is now come when the sanctuary of the Lord has been cleansed, and those who are in fact in the sanctuary are at unity and hence are able ministers of the new covenant. They must stand shoulder to shoulder for the kingdom message, and never be terrified by opposition that arises. W 5/15/34

**June 2**

(324)

*Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah.—Jer. 31:31.*

Jehovah was now about to call attention to something never before plainly mentioned in the Scriptures, that is, the making of the new covenant; hence he spoke by his prophet, saying, "Behold." The spiritual house of Israel embraces all who, trusting in Jesus' blood as the redemption for man, have made a covenant to do God's will and have been begotten of God. This necessarily includes all spirit-begotten ones, particularly the "little flock". *Judah* means "Praise" and applies specifically to those who have been and who are performing their duty in kingdom service. Jeremiah's prophecy concerns the new covenant to be made with the house of spiritual Israel (all spirit-begotten ones), and with the house of Judah, the kingdom company, which is to be associated with Jesus, "the Lion of the tribe of Juda." W 4/15/34

**June 3**

(11)

*He took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people, saying, This is the blood of the testament which God hath enjoined.—Heb. 9:19, 20.*

The "Lord's goat" pictures those whose lives as human creatures are sacrificed, which must precede their selection as Jehovah's witnesses. This includes the remnant. Inauguration of the new covenant does not need to wait until they have actually undergone dissolution of the human organism. Right to human existence ceased when they were taken into the covenant by sacrifice. Since the primary purpose of the new covenant is the vindication of Jehovah's name, and the covenant is Jehovah's instrument to gather out an approved people to bear testimony to his name, it follows that the new covenant must be inaugurated or dedicated before the vindication of Jehovah's name takes place at the battle of Armageddon. W 5/1/34

**June 4**

(41)

*Then Daniel answered and said before the king, Let thy gifts be to thyself, and give thy rewards to another; yet I will read the writing unto the king, and make known to him the interpretation.—Dan. 5:17.*

In presenting Jehovah's message before earth's rulers at this present time, and announcing his judgments against Satan's organization, Jehovah's witnesses are not doing so for selfish gain. They are not asking, nor are they expecting, to receive any favor from worldly source. Let the rulers of this world favor their own; which they will do, of course. This is made manifest on every occasion when the questions concerning the truth are presented before the rulers by Jehovah's witnesses. Those whom Daniel foreshadowed at this point, namely, Jehovah's witnesses, began to give answer before the ruling powers of the world, particularly from July 26, 1931, forward, by serving upon them the message of the *Kingdom* booklet. W 11/15/34

**June 5**

(28)

*The temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.—Rev. 11: 19.*

The law covenant had the ark of the covenant. The new covenant has a correspondingly greater one. (Heb. 9: 1-5, 23, 24) The Lord's coming to the temple in 1918 marks the opening of the temple in heaven. Then follows the inauguration of the new covenant. The presence of the 'ark in the temple of heaven' denotes Jehovah's presence there as represented by the Lord Jesus Christ, the great Mediator and Inaugurator of the covenant, who has come to the temple. At the inauguration of the law covenant at Sinai there was a great shaking of the earth and "there were thunders and lightnings". So likewise at the opening of the temple in heaven marking the inauguration of the new covenant there followed "lightnings", etc., particularly with reference to God's people. W 6/1/34

**June 6**

(241)

*They sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty*—Rev. 15: 3.

The song of Moses was a testimony then against the unfaithful ones of Israel. The song sung today by those under the Greater Moses must be sung in the ears of those unfaithful to their covenant to do God's will and as a testimony against them. In due time judgment will be executed against the unfaithful. It is a time of joy, and therefore a time for singing, because the spiritual Israelites taken out for the name of Jehovah and to whom he has given his name, making them his witnesses, are now entering into war and, proving faithful, shall soon enter into the everlasting 'land of promise'. The Greater Moses, the King, is with them, and he is certain to lead the faithful ones to complete victory and the vindication of Jehovah's name. W 6/15/34

**June 7**

(101)

*Thou shalt not be affrighted at them: for the Lord thy God is among you, a mighty God*—Deut. 7:21.

The faithful remnant must now carry on an aggressive warfare against those who now "stand in the holy place" and who are enemies of God. Such enemies falsely claiming to represent God, must be pushed back relentlessly and exposed by the truth. The remnant are instructed in the matter of warfare against the enemy and, trusting in the Lord, must bravely follow the specific instructions given them by the Lord. Being in the Lord's army, they are not to fear the attack of modern entrenched enemies, Satan's representatives. The faithful will tread down the opposition and continue to advance, even though there is much inconvenience and suffering entailed upon them by reason of their faithfulness. They must fearlessly continue to proclaim Jehovah's praise and announce his judgments and his kingdom. He is in their camp; they must keep it clean.—Deut. 23: 9-14. W 7/1/34

**June 8**

(269)

*The king, when he heard these words, was sore displeased with himself, and set his heart on Daniel to deliver him; and he laboured . . . to deliver him.*

—Dan. 6:14.

This illustrates Jehovah's displeasure with those who make and enforce laws upon the pretext of protecting the people but the real purpose of which is to cause Jehovah's witnesses to be brought into difficulties and to suffer injustice. In setting his heart on Daniel to deliver him Darius illustrates how Jehovah provides means for his witnesses to present their cases before worldly courts to the end that his witnesses may give their testimony and, if released from custody and from penalties of misapplied law, may be free to continue as witnesses in giving the kingdom testimony until their work is completed. It is surely not his will that his witnesses make no effort to defend themselves before courts. Such is an occasion to testify to Jehovah's name. W 12/15/34

**June 9**

(52)

*When I shall say to the righteous, that he shall surely live; if he trust to his own righteousness, and commit iniquity, . . . for his iniquity that he hath committed, he shall die for it.—Ezek. 33:13.*

Having taken his stand on the Lord's side and learning of God's gracious provision for those of the Jonadab class, such cannot turn again to the beggarly elements of Satan's organization and at the same time have the Lord's protection. Those who have once sought and found refuge on the Lord's side and who turn again to unrighteousness will die justly. Jehovah's executioner is entirely justified in slaying such, and his hands are clean, because he carries out Jehovah's orders. No one in the universe can ever justly say the slaughter at Armageddon will be barbarous, unjustified or unrighteous. On the contrary, it will meet the requirements of God's law concerning the sacredness of human life. W 8/15/34

**June 10**

(323)

*God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, . . . And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him.—Gen. 6:5, 6.*

The Hebrew word here for "repented" is also translated "be comforted, receive comfort, comfort, ease (oneself)". "Therefore saith the Lord, the Lord of hosts, the mighty One of Israel, Ah, I will ease me of mine adversaries, and avenge me of mine enemies." (Isa. 1:24) Jehovah himself being wholly devoted to righteousness, it grieved him at heart that man had taken the wicked course; hence God's heart needed to be eased or comforted and would receive it, not from what some creature might do, but from his own course of action toward those who had brought reproach upon his name. His decision was to avenge or vindicate his name, and this he would do by the destruction of those who had united with Satan's organization and had willfully reproached his name. W 9/1/34

**June 11**

(322)

*Be subject to principalities and powers.—Titus 3:1.*

In 1929 the Lord made clearly to appear to his people who constitute "the higher powers". Since then they have been enabled to see clearly that the faithful ones must obey Jehovah and Christ Jesus, who are "the higher powers", and make no compromise with the wicked organization ruling the world and not ordained of God. Jehovah's witnesses have no inclination to violate any law of the land, and will not do so when that law is in harmony with God's law; but they will be guided by God's law and obey his law and trust wholly in him, regardless of results. For this reason the clergy persistently accuse Jehovah's witnesses before the political ruling powers of the world. The Devil expects now to use pressure on Jehovah's witnesses to cause them to forsake the path of integrity and thus to make it appear that any creature that serves Jehovah is prompted by selfishness or what the creature may get out of it from God. W 10/1/34

**June 12**

(74)

*Till he knew that the most high God ruled in the kingdom of men, and that he appointeth over it whomsoever he will.—Dan. 5:21.*

The "seven times" of the Gentiles ended in 1914, and, like Belshazzar, the visible rulers of the world failed to then learn the vital truth that Jehovah is God, although they had been told of it time and again. Had they learned this great and all-important truth they would not have held a modern "feast", which present-day world carousal was foreshadowed by Belshazzar's feast. God sets up what the world considers the "basest [or lowest] of men", that is, Christ, who abased himself, and whom Jehovah has exalted even as he had caused to be foretold by his prophets. In 1931 Jehovah God by his witnesses brought this great fact to the attention of the rulers of this world, but they failed to give heed thereto or to learn any part of such great and important truths. W 11/15/34

**June 13**

(326)

*Israel, whom God went to redeem for a people to himself, and to make him a name.—2 Sam. 7:23.*

The redemption and deliverance of the Israelites from Egypt's oppression was merely incidental to the vindication of Jehovah's name. Likewise the redemption and deliverance of the human race, and particularly of the church, are things incidental to the vindication of Jehovah's name. Such redemption and deliverance are, however, proof that Jehovah has the right of the great question at issue. By bringing nine plagues upon Egypt before the destruction of her first-born and the destruction of Pharaoh's army Jehovah furnished ample opportunity for Pharaoh to yield to his demands and let his people go or to harden his heart and suffer destruction. Even so in connection with the antitypical fulfilment of those plagues Jehovah gives warning notice to Satan's organization now. W 3/15/34

**June 14**

(142)

*These are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that, believing, ye might have life through his name.—John 20: 31.*

Salvation is through Christ Jesus. Jehovah first makes him his vindicator, establishes his kingdom, and then brings the people to a knowledge of the truth in order that they, under the Kingdom, may receive life everlasting if obedient. If the law covenant with Israel could not give life (which it could not), neither can the new covenant with spiritual Israel, because the new covenant is a substitute for the old. Life is given only to those who have faith in Jesus Christ and continue faithful. The purpose of the new covenant therefore is to gather out unto God a people that will maintain integrity toward God while suffering reproach and contradiction, and who become his witnesses and who, then continuing faithful, have a part in the vindication of his name. W 4/1/34

**June 15**

(40)

*For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.—Rom. 11: 27.*

Spiritual Israel had sinned and stood guilty of iniquity before God. God was displeased with them. Such condition existed at the time Christ Jesus came to the temple for judgment. Then it was that God forgave their sins and turned his anger away from them. (Isa. 12: 1) Christ Jesus, the judge with all power and authority, had now come to the temple, and he sits in judgment so as to purge the "sons of Levi" and cleanse them from their sins, in order that those sons of God might offer an acceptable sacrifice unto God, that is, from that time onward. (Mal. 3: 3) The acceptable sacrifice here is that these people taken out for the name of Jehovah must become Jehovah's witnesses and, in order to be pleasing to God, must thereafter offer the sacrifice of praise to Jehovah continually, that is to say, the fruit of their lips. W 4/15/34

**June 16**

(325)

*Moreover he sprinkled with blood both the tabernacle and all the vessels of the ministry.—Heb. 9: 21.*

Moses took half of the blood and put it in basins and half thereof he sprinkled on the altar. (Ex. 24: 6) This foreshadowed that at the inauguration of the new covenant the appropriate time and opportunity had come for God's approved ones to offer an offering in righteousness, that is, the sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving to his name, the altar being the basis on which such sacrifice must be offered. Sprinkling the blood on the altar signified that it was sanctified for offering such sacrifices and that the time had come to make such sacrifice. Thus the ceremony inaugurating the law covenant corresponds with that inaugurating the new covenant. Then Moses read to the people what was written in the book of the covenant which God had given him. Even so the Lord Jesus Christ does at the inauguration of the new covenant. W 5/1/34

**June 17**

(198)

*Our God is a consuming fire.—Heb. 12: 29.*

At the time of the inauguration of the new covenant there are those in line for the kingdom but who refuse to hear and obey the Greater Moses, Christ Jesus, the Priest, Prophet and Mediator of the new covenant. Toward these God is a consuming fire. Jehovah, having separated his own and selected them as a people for his name, will sustain those who continue to faithfully maintain their integrity toward him. Hence they have occasion to fear God, but have no occasion to fear what man or the Devil and his angels may do to them. They know that they have not the strength or sufficiency of themselves, but that their strength and protection come from the Lord. "Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing, as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God." (2 Cor. 3: 5) By his grace, as his witnesses they can do all things for which they are anointed and commissioned. W 5/15/34

**June 18**

(313)

*Unto the eunuchs that keep my sabbaths, and choose the things that please me, and take hold of my covenant; even unto them will I give in mine house, and within my walls, a place and a name.—Isa. 56:4, 5.*

At the time of the Lord's coming to the temple for judgment, and the inauguration of the new covenant, there was a company of his faithful followers who were foreshadowed or pictured by the faithful Naomi. Others came to a knowledge of the truth and were brought into the covenant after 1919. These latter ones seem to be foreshadowed by the "eunuchs" who were brought into the house of the Lord, and well pictured by Ruth. Jehovah says: "I will give them an everlasting name, that shall not be cut off." (Vs. 5) This refers to the new name which he gives to those toward whom the new covenant is inaugurated and who are made members of the royal house and who become Jehovah's witnesses to bear testimony to his name. W 6/1/34

**June 19**

(199)

*Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant.—Deut. 7:9.*

In every covenant in the making of which two or more parties are involved there must be a good and valuable consideration moving from one to the other. The faithful performance of the terms and provisions of the covenant constitutes a good and valuable consideration of one to the other. Jehovah by the terms of his covenant binds himself to keep and perform the same. Those on the other side of the covenant are likewise bound to keep and perform the terms thereof. Jehovah is always faithful, and the other parties to the covenant must be faithful if they would please God and be used to accomplish his purposes. It is by Jehovah's faithfulness and the faithfulness of those whom he takes into the kingdom covenant that his name will be vindicated. Throughout Deuteronomy the pervading counsel is faithful devotion to Jehovah. W 6/15/34

**June 20**

(316)

*That he might preserve us alive, as it is at this day. And it shall be our righteousness, if we observe to do all these commandments before the Lord our God, as he hath commanded us.—Deut. 6:24, 25.*

The remnant in the kingdom covenant are of the "chosen" ones of Jehovah. In times past they were not a people, but, now being taken out and anointed, they are Jehovah's people for his name. The selection of these and their induction into the kingdom covenant is not due to self-righteousness or so-called "character development", but is due to Jehovah's faithfulness to his covenant, and for the vindication of his word and name. They are taken out for his name's sake and are approved because of their faithfulness and obedience. Failure of God's professed people who have been called and who fail must be received as a warning, so that "let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall".—1 Cor. 10:12, 13. W 7/1/34

**June 21**

(26)

*He shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things.—Acts 3:20, 21.*

The apostle Peter then quotes from the words of Deuteronomy 18:15 and directly connects the same with the "times of restitution". Thus he identifies Jesus Christ alone as the one foreshadowed by Moses. In the days of Abraham Jehovah had set up his typical kingdom by placing Melchizedek, "priest of the most high God," upon his throne. That typical kingdom passed away, and hundreds of years thereafter Jehovah through Moses made a covenant with his people in Moab, which covenant foreshadowed the covenant later made with Jesus for the kingdom. That covenant made in Moab shows that it was Jehovah's purpose to revive or restore the kingdom of God, which he had set up under Melchizedek; it definitely lays down instructions concerning a future King and kingdom.—Deut. 17:14-20. W 7/15/34

**June 22**

(147)

*If the avenger of blood pursue after him, then they shall not deliver the slayer up into his hand; because he smote his neighbour unwittingly.—Josh. 20: 5.*

It is the duty of the antitypical Levites, from whom God's royal priesthood is taken, to give information, aid and comfort to those who now seek the Lord's organization, the antitypical cities of refuge. Therefore those who refuse or fail to go among the people and call upon them at their homes and give them the Lord's life-giving kingdom message, and those who hinder, oppose and discourage those thus obeying the Lord in carrying the message of truth to the people, show an unloving and unjust spirit that would hand over the Jonadab class without mercy to be executed by God's Executioner at Armageddon. Failure or refusal to assume and carry out this responsibility will not go unnoticed by the Lord, because he has enlightened his anointed and they must obey. W 8/15/34

**June 23**

(283)

*By faith Noah, being warned of God concerning things not seen as yet, moved with godly fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; through which he condemned the world.—Heb. 11: 7, A.R.V.*

The building of the ark displayed Noah's faith, and hence condemned the world. The construction of the ark was a powerful form of preaching or bearing testimony; but Noah would also explain to those people about him why he was building the ark, and thus he would bear testimony by word of mouth. Therefore the human family and the "sons of God" who were married to daughters of men, as well as their offspring, would thus receive Noah's testimony. By this means Noah was made a 'theater for both men and angels', even as Jehovah's witnesses now on earth are witnesses both to the unseen and to the seen ones concerning God's purpose to destroy the world at the battle of Armageddon.—1 Cor. 4: 9, margin. W 9/1/34

**June 24**

(138)

*The God in whose hand thy breath is, and whose are all thy ways, hast thou not glorified: then was the part of the hand sent from him; and this writing was written.*

—Dan. 5:23, 24.

Since 1918 Jehovah's purpose to destroy the organization of this wicked world has been repeatedly told to the rulers as a notice and warning to them; hence they can never plead ignorance concerning Jehovah's King and his kingdom. With the completion of the pouring out of the seventh "vial" of wrath (which pouring out began in 1928), "Christendom" has received full notice that she is weighed in the balance, found wanting, and is to be destroyed. It is the handwriting on the wall. The rulers, though being informed, refuse to repent and to cease interfering with Jehovah's witnesses in carrying the message of truth to the people. Their wicked conduct is against "the Lord of heaven", because these witnesses bring, not their own, but God's message. W 11/15/34

**June 25**

(78)

*Say unto Aaron, Stretch out thy rod, and smite the dust of the land, that it may become lice throughout all the land of Egypt. And they did so.—Ex. 8:16, 17.*

Lice are associated with filth and are found on creatures of unclean habits. The lice here mentioned were nippers. It is the divine power and authority conferred upon Christ and by him put upon the remnant on earth that causes the coming of the antitypical nippers upon the world, which forms Satan's organization. The lice symbolically represent that which results from the message of truth delivered by Jehovah's witnesses and which greatly annoys, plagues and nips the unclean organization of Satan, and particularly the official members thereof. The visible part of Satan's organization, particularly that called "Christendom", is an unclean and abominable thing and a good habitation for lice. It hypocritically claims to be on the Lord's side, but is on Satan's. W 3/15/34

**June 26**

(25)

*Christ also suffered for you, leaving you an example, that ye should follow his steps.—1 Pet. 2: 21, R.V.*

Jehovah permitted his beloved Son to be subjected to the greatest and most severe test to which any creature was ever put. That test brought much suffering upon Jesus. His suffering was not necessary in order that the ransom price might be provided, but that the name of Jehovah might be vindicated. Those who have a part in vindicating Jehovah's name must suffer in like manner, even though not to the great extent to which Jesus suffered. As we approach now to the day of Armageddon, and hence to the time of the most severe test upon the remnant, let those who are privileged to be in the covenant for the kingdom with Christ Jesus rejoice to be permitted to fill up the sufferings that are left behind for the present time, knowing this, that Jehovah will cause all things to work together for good to those whom he has called to the kingdom and who really love him. W 10/15/34

**June 27**

(292)

*They will deliver you up to the councils, . . . and ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them.—Matt. 10: 17, 18.*

The official element used by the conspirators to bring about suffering and punishment of Jehovah's witnesses must be told the reason for giving testimony of and concerning the kingdom. This makes known to them that by opposing Jehovah's witnesses they are fighting against God. Thus Jehovah uses his witnesses by putting in their mouths the scriptures and legal argument and giving them opportunity and ability to present this before magistrates and courts, and to do so in a forcible manner such as worldly lawyers do not see and will not do. Worldly lawyers look at the technicalities involved. Jehovah's witnesses have but one purpose, and that is to magnify Jehovah's name, and hence they see and present the real issue. Such is the reason for the "Order of Trial". W 12/15/34

**June 28**

(273)

*Keep the unity of the spirit.—Eph. 4:3.*

Those who are in fact in the sanctuary are at unity. Why, then, do disturbances continue to arise among those who associate themselves together in service companies? Manifestly because in such companies there are those meeting together who are not in the temple and have not come unto the unity of the faith and knowledge in Christ Jesus and who therefore are not anointed to do the Lord's work. Such continue to manifest the spirit of selfishness and lawlessness, insisting on doing things their own way and ignoring organization directions. Hence disturbances follow. Those in the temple, appreciating their great favor from the Lord, see that the enemy is fighting desperately against the remnant and that all in the temple must stand shoulder to shoulder for the kingdom message and never be terrified by opposition that arises and that is brought against them by the enemy. W 5/15/34

**June 29**

(290)

*The sons of the stranger, that join themselves to the Lord, to serve him, and to love the name of the Lord, . . . even them will I bring to my holy mountain, and make them joyful in my house of prayer.—Isa. 56:6, 7.*

With Jehovah there is no respect of persons who manifest their love and obedience to him. He says: "Their burnt offerings and their sacrifices shall be accepted upon mine altar: for mine house shall be called an house of prayer for all people." (Vs. 7) The words "for all people" manifestly include the class pictured by Ruth the Moabitess, who was a stranger and who was brought into the house of natural Israel. Those toward whom the new covenant was inaugurated at the Lord's coming to the temple and who were therefore brought into the temple and anointed, were made able ministers of the covenant to minister to those who should afterwards be brought into the covenant, to wit, the class foreshadowed by Ruth. These also become able ministers of the new covenant. W 6/1/34

**June 30**

(164)

*Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.*  
—1 Thess. 5:24.

Those whom God approves, and who shall have part in the vindication of his name, shall be "Holiness unto the Lord". (Zech. 14: 20) The call to the kingdom was issued and many responded thereto. Those who proved faithful up to the time of the Lord's coming to the temple were chosen. Now the "called and chosen" who are taken into the kingdom covenant must prove faithful. Only those faithful unto death shall receive the crown of life. Those once in line for the kingdom and who are not faithful fail. They are "children in whom is no faith". (Deut. 32: 20) Moses was "faithful in all his house", and his faithfulness was a testimony to those who followed. Christ Jesus is faithful over his royal house; and the condition named in the covenant for the kingdom is that all members thereof must be faithful. W 6/15/34

**July 1**

(52)

*But if ye worship not, ye shall be cast the same hour into the midst of a burning fiery furnace: and who is that God that shall deliver you?*—Dan. 3: 15.

Today worldly ruling powers say, in substance, to Jehovah's witnesses: "If you will cease going from house to house and calling upon the people and come to us and get a license or permit, we might let you go on; but if you do not first obtain a permit or do as the churches do in carrying on your religion, and persist in going from house to house without obeying us, we will certainly run you in." Satan's agents have no fear of Jehovah, since they do not know and serve him. Hence they threaten Jehovah's witnesses and say: "Who is Jehovah, that he shall deliver you out of our hands? We will teach you who is running this country, and Jehovah cannot help you." Thus they defy Jehovah God. This is done in an effort to weaken the faith of Jehovah's witnesses and to break down their integrity toward God. W 10/15/34

**July 2**

(68)

*If thou forbear to deliver them that are drawn unto death, and those that are ready to be slain; if thou sayest, Behold, we knew it not; doth not he that pondereth the heart consider it?—Prov. 24:11, 12.*

The priestly class, God's anointed remnant now on earth, must minister unto the people, that the people may have notice and warning, and thereby cause each one to bear his own responsibility before the Lord. Jehovah's witnesses must prepare the way before those who may desire to seek refuge. "Thou shalt prepare thee a way, and divide the coasts of thy land, which the Lord thy God giveth thee to inherit, into three parts, that every slayer may flee thither." (Deut. 19:3) This provision concerning the city of refuge exactly harmonizes with the Lord's commandment, which is addressed to the remnant: "Go through the gates: prepare ye the way of the people; cast up, cast up the highway."—Isa. 62:10. W 8/15/34

**July 3**

(285)

*The angels which kept not their first estate [principality, margin], but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains, under darkness, unto the judgment of the great day.—Jude 6.*

Their "principality" was the place where Jehovah had assigned them in his organization under Lucifer. They did not give up their spirit bodies but still have them, although at times they may clothe themselves with human bodies. This they must have done when they appeared as nephilim or giants in the earth in Noah's time. "Their own habitation" means the place to which they were originally assigned in Jehovah's organization and which they left when they joined Satan in the rebellion. The "great day" means the great day of God Almighty, the battle of Armageddon. It is the day of their execution under the terms of the judgment long ago written against them, which execution will be an exhibition of Jehovah's power and a vindication of his name. W 9/15/34

**July 4**

(281)

*He careth for you. Be sober, be vigilant.—1 Pet. 5:7, 8.*

Of Darius it is written: "Then the king went to his palace, and passed the night fasting; neither were instruments of music brought before him; and his sleep went from him" because Daniel was in the lions' den. This does not mean that God has to fast or refrain from pleasure, but here it evidently means that when man has a serious task to perform he should see to it that he conserves his faculties and uses them to the very best advantage. Darius showed genuine interest in Daniel's welfare. Jehovah has a deep interest in all those whom he has anointed to be his witnesses. When they are passing through some strenuous ordeal that entails upon them suffering and puts them in great danger Jehovah is watching over them with an eye that never sleeps. Jehovah himself loves his own, and, as it is written, "in all their affliction he was afflicted."—Isa. 63:9. W 12/15/34

**July 5**

(101)

*Aaron stretched out his hand with his rod, and smote the dust of the earth, and it became lice in man and in beast . . . throughout all the land of Egypt.—Ex. 8:17.*

That dust symbolized the earthly, visible part of Satan's organization, and particularly "Christendom", because that part is hypocritical in the superlative degree. The antitypical mouthpiece of the Greater Moses, Christ Jesus, and which is God's remnant on earth acting by authority conferred on them by Christ, bears and gives forth his message that smites "Christendom" and declares it to be not of God nor of Christ, but that it is unclean and abominable in God's sight and exceedingly lousy with Satan's agents who nip the flesh and suck the lifeblood of the people. This message greatly offends "Christendom's" respectability. Thus Jehovah's witnesses are used to bring a plague on Satan's organization by exposing the duplicity and hypocrisy of its chief visible operators. W 3/15/34

**July 6**

(28)

*With an oath by him . . . by so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.—Heb. 7:21, 22.*

Jehovah provides a mediator of the old law covenant and a mediator for the new covenant. The Jews as a nation were incompetent to make a covenant with Jehovah. By reason of Moses' faith and faithfulness to God Jehovah chose him as mediator of the law covenant that he afterwards made in Egypt. The Greater Moses was chosen as the mediator of the new covenant, and this selection was made after Jesus was baptized and following his temptation in the wilderness. It was then that he became surety (pledge) and mediator of the new covenant later to be made. The law covenant was made at the slaying of the paschal lamb in Egypt. The new covenant was made at the slaying of the antitypical paschal lamb, Christ Jesus; but Jesus had been selected as the mediator three and one-half years prior to that time. W 4/1/34

**July 7**

(303)

*Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel.—Heb. 8:8.*

"In that he saith, A new covenant, he hath made the first [covenant, the law covenant] old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away." (V. 13) In Jeremiah's day, and when his prophecy was uttered, that law covenant was decaying, but had not fully decayed. By his prophet Jeremiah Jehovah made known what he would do about the old covenant when it was fully decayed and what he would do concerning a new covenant. "The days," mentioned by the prophet, began on the passover day of A.D. 33. Jesus had celebrated for the last time the passover instituted in Egypt, and immediately thereafter set up a memorial of his own death; and at that time the new covenant was made. Jesus died that same day. "Those days," meaning the days of the old covenant, had ended. The days of the new covenant had begun. W 4/15/34

**July 8**

(80)

*Then went up Moses . . . and seventy of the elders of Israel; and they saw the God of Israel: and there was under his feet as it were a paved work of a sapphire stone, and as it were the body of heaven in his clearness.*

—Ex. 24: 9, 10.

Those who accompanied Moses into the mountain of Sinai at the inauguration of the law covenant saw the manifestation of Jehovah's glory. Likewise since Jehovah has builded up Zion and appeared in his glory he has revealed his glory to those of Zion, including the remnant, all of whom are at unity, and hence in the temple, and are taught of Jehovah and have discerned his glory, his name and his purpose. They also see Jehovah's glorious organization, of which Christ Jesus is the Head. They discern that this organization includes the faithful witnesses of Jehovah now on earth 'seated in heavenly places in Christ Jesus'. Upon this organization Jehovah sits and rules. W 5/1/34

**July 9**

(23)

*Mark them which cause divisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.*

—Rom. 16: 17.

At this stage of the church anyone meeting with a company of the Lord's people who refuses to abide by organization instructions, and insists on being lawless and following his own selfish way, furnishes proof that he is not in the temple. The proper course for the remnant under such circumstances is to avoid all controversies and continue to do faithfully what they are commissioned to do. It is better to suffer wrong in silence and to go straight forward in the work which the faithful are commissioned to do than to try to justify oneself or defend oneself. (1 Cor. 6: 7) Every one in the temple will have confidence in every other member of the temple company and will be diligent to put aside all selfishness and do the work committed to them with gladness of heart. They will avoid those who attempt to cause divisions. W 5/15/34

**July 10**

(266)

*There be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.—Matt. 19:12.*

Ruth was a Moabitess, and hence was a stranger to Israel and to its laws; but when she volunteered to go to Bethlehem with the returning childless Naomi, and that with no prospect of earthly marriage in sight for her, and nothing upon which to base a hope of marriage and bringing forth children, Ruth then and there made herself the equivalent of a eunuch. Hence she well pictured both the eunuch and the stranger mentioned in Isaiah 56:2-7. Those pictured by Ruth, and who are brought into the new covenant after 1918, become able ministers thereof and participate in this ministry. Before one could become an able minister of the new covenant he must be brought to maturity in Christ, be an elder in fact, and minister to others who are spirit-begotten and to the Jonadab company.  
W 6/1/34

**July 11**

(200)

*Ascribe ye greatness unto our God. He is the Rock, his work is perfect; . . . a God of truth.—Deut. 32:3, 4.*

The kingdom is Jehovah God's kingdom, which he prepares and gives to his beloved Son, Christ Jesus. The things pertaining to the kingdom are pictured by a great mountain of rock, and in the song written and sung by Moses in Moab at the command of Jehovah there for the first time in the Scriptures it is that Jehovah is called The Rock. He is The Rock, and all his works are perfect. He is the "King of eternity". (Jer. 10:10, margin) He is the great Refuge and Protector of his people. Jehovah is definitely named in Deuteronomy as the King. "And he was king in Jeshurun, when the heads of the people and the tribes of Israel were gathered together." (Deut. 33:5) This shows that the faithful remnant are brought into the covenant for the kingdom after the gathering of Jehovah's saints to him at the temple. W 6/15/34

**July 12**

(70)

*The Lord hath avouched thee this day to be his peculiar people, as he hath promised thee, and that thou shouldest keep all his commandments; and to make thee high above all nations which he hath made, in praise, and in name, and in honour.—Deut. 26:18, 19.*

By the covenant in Moab, that is, by the covenant of faithfulness, Jehovah foretold that he would give the remnant a new name, and that they must be a holy people devoted entirely to the service of Jehovah and must serve him faithfully. The remnant must know therefore "this day", that is, this the day of Jehovah, that Jehovah is God; hence they are responsible for making this great truth known and they must render full obedience to God in bearing testimony to the truth. Obedience assures their remaining in the "land of the living". (Deut. 5:33) The covenant made in Moab emphasizes faithfulness; hence it is properly called the covenant of faithfulness. W 7/1/34

**July 13**

(65)

*Jesus, whom the heaven must receive until the times of restoration of all things, whereof God spake by the mouth of his holy prophets.—Acts 3:20, 21, A.R.V.*

The kingdom looking to the vindication of Jehovah's name had been typically set up among the Jews and had fallen down, and in due time must be restored. In 1914 Christ Jesus received the kingdom and was sent forth by Jehovah to rule. It was then that he began his rule and cast Satan and his wicked ones out of heaven. In 1918 the Lord Jesus came to the temple, gathered unto himself the faithful ones of Jehovah, and was there presented to all professed followers of Christ Jesus as the King and rightful Ruler of the earth, and, above all, as Vindicator of Jehovah's name. The coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple marks the beginning of "times of restitution" of all things which God has spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began. W 7/15/34

**July 14**

(150)

*Restore him to the city of his refuge, whither he was fled: and he shall abide in it unto the death of the high priest, which was anointed.—Num. 35: 25.*

The Jonadab class, having found refuge with God's organization, must remain therein and continue in heart sympathy and harmony with God and his organization and must prove this proper heart condition by cooperating with Jehovah's witnesses until the office of the high priest class yet on earth be finished. Thus people of good will must do if they would have their lives spared during the battle of the great day of God Almighty. Jesus Christ is the great High Priest, and the faithful members of his royal house are counted in as members of that priesthood. The anointing oil of God's spirit has been specially poured out on all of Jehovah's witnesses in these latter days; and being thus anointed, the remnant are made members of the royal priesthood. W 8/15/34

**July 15**

(185)

*Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego answered and said to the king, O Nebuchadnezzar, we are not careful to answer thee in this matter.—Dan. 3: 16.*

In other phrase, they said in substance to the king: "We are for Jehovah, first, last, and all the time; it is not needful for us to give consideration to what others may say that is contrary to Jehovah's commandment." Such must of necessity be the attitude of those who are today faithful unto Jehovah and his kingdom. Jehovah revealed to his people in 1929 the true meaning of "the higher powers"; thereafter they have not yielded to the enemy's threats. They know Jehovah and Christ Jesus are "the higher powers" and will obey them. In 1931 they knowingly accepted the new name from Jehovah as his witnesses; since then there is no reason for them to consider what Satan and his agents say to them. They are on Jehovah's side; his instructions they will obey regardless of threats of violence made against them. W 10/15/34

**July 16**

(222)

*Preached unto the spirits in prison, that aforetime were disobedient, when the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah.—1 Pet. 3: 19, 20, A.R.V.*

Disobedience in disregarding God's organization and his service would separate these spirits from Jehovah. Their fear would bring them into Satan's snare. Satan and his nephilim bullies would hold these "sons of God" in restraint or in prison, not permitting them again to return to Jehovah and his service; even as Satan now holds the "great multitude" in restraint, away from the assembly of God's witnesses, by using the clergy to restrain them. But as the message of truth now preached by the consistent lives of God's faithful witnesses, as well as by radio and in printed form, reaches the "great multitude", even so God has arranged that the message shall reach the spirit prisoners held by Satan, that they in due time might seek him. W 9/15/34

**July 17**

(172)

*Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me, I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart.—Ps. 40: 7, 8.*

At the Jordan river, when baptized, Jesus presented himself without spot or blemish unto God in fulfilment of the above prophecy. That was the covenant of sacrifice between God and Christ Jesus, since it was God's will that he should be a sacrifice. Jesus there unconditionally offered himself to do whatever is the will of God, and it was then God's will that Christ Jesus should be his vindicator; and that to qualify for such he must maintain his integrity under the most severe test even unto an ignominious death, and that his lifeblood poured out should be and is the redemptive price for man. 'And for this cause he is made the mediator of the new covenant.' (Heb. 9: 15, A.R.V.) Jehovah God gave to Jesus the ministry of the covenant, that is, the work of taking out a people for His name. W 4/1/34

**July 18**

(201)

*He sent Moses his servant . . . He spake, and there came . . . lice in all their coasts.—Ps. 105:26, 31.*

From 1921 forward Jehovah's witnesses have been continuously and consistently heralding his message and exposing the hypocritical duplicity and lousy state of "Christendom" in particular and of Satan's organization in general. By completely separating themselves from "Christendom" and refusing to have any part or anything in common with it, or to touch the unclean, lousy, crawling thing, Jehovah's witnesses add force to this plaguing message. The lice plague came upon Israelites as well as Egyptians; which means that in order for a professed Christian to be pleasing and acceptable to God such must be separate from the world and clean; hence cleansing of God's sanctuary is involved and includes the removal of "elective elders" as parasites. This must take place before God's organization is entirely clean. W 3/15/34

**July 19**

(71)

*Then the king commanded, and they brought Daniel, and cast him into the den of lions. Now the king spake and said unto Daniel, Thy God, whom thou servest continually, he will deliver thee.—Dan. 6:16.*

The crucial test must come; else how could Jehovah's witnesses prove their integrity? Darius the king occupied the position of representing regal power delivering up the innocent to their executioners. God permits his witnesses to be delivered up and subjected to unjust punishments that the test may be applied in vindication of his name and as a testimony against his enemies. (Mark 13:9) The lions in the den where Daniel was put were the king's lions and therefore pictured Jehovah's forces of justice, which forces do destroy those guilty of breaking the divine law. His innocent witnesses are in danger when the executioners take the law into their own hands, assuming to be 'bearers of God's sword'. They fail to reckon that Jehovah is looking after his own. W 12/15/34

**July 20**

(244)

*And upon the nobles of the children of Israel he laid not his hand: also they saw God, and did eat and drink.*

—Ex. 24: 11.

Upon these Jehovah "laid not his hand" to do them hurt, in spite of the fact that they have a vision of his glory. Likewise Jehovah did not turn his hand against Isaiah when the prophet saw the Lord's glory at his temple; and there Isaiah pictured the faithful remnant now on earth. (Isa 6:5) The remnant, like Isaiah, being cleansed and made members of the "faithful servant" class, and hence Jehovah's witnesses, Jehovah now says to them: "Fear thou not." (Isa. 41:10) He now feeds his own people upon food convenient for them, as foreshadowed by the fact that the "seventy elders" or "nobles" ate and drank. Jehovah has separated his people from others and has spread a feast for them, and they, the remnant, now on earth enjoy it and sing praises to Jehovah. W 5/1/34

**July 21**

(192)

*Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away; how shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious?—2 Cor. 3:7, 8.*

The shining of Moses' face was a reflection of Jehovah's glory. Moses served as a mirror to reflect that glory. The administration of the new covenant by Christ Jesus the Mediator, the Greater Moses, is far more glorious than that which was manifested at the inauguration of the law covenant. The glory of the Lord Jehovah shines into the face of Christ Jesus, his great High Priest and Mediator, and is mirrored there to those in the new covenant and in the temple. (2 Cor. 4:4-6, Roth.) God's glory shone upon Moses' face; hence the glory was not that of the Israelites, but Moses was reflecting the glory of God. At the inauguration of the new covenant at Mount Zion Jehovah there appears in his glory. Christ Jesus mirrors the glory of Jehovah to those of Zion. W 5/15/34

**July 22**

(34)

*Let us exalt his name together.—Ps. 34:3.*

During the Elisha period of the church we have learned from the Lord that it is our privilege to declare Jehovah's glorious name. Having received this commission and ministry, like the apostle, we have "obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful". (1 Cor. 7:25) No more shall we exalt the name of man, including ourselves, nor should we attempt to exalt ourselves before others. "For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants [as able ministers of the new covenant and made such by the Lord's grace] for Jesus' sake [for the Mediator's sake]. For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness [out of the secret place, that is, the temple, dark to all on the outside (Matt. 10:27)], hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Christ Jesus."—2 Cor. 4:5,6. W 6/1/34

**July 23**

(273)

*Thou shalt in any wise set him king over thee, whom the Lord thy God shall choose.—Deut. 17:15.*

Instructions concerning the future king of Israel are definitely laid down in the book of Deuteronomy. Also the law governing levirate marriage is set forth therein in connection with the covenant in Moab, and in no other place in the Scriptures. (Deut. 25:5-10) The law of levirate marriage was a kingdom provision, with which Jehovah's remnant must comply in fulfillment of the prophetic picture God made by Naomi and Ruth in bringing forth fruit toward the kingdom and in harmony with the kingdom covenant. The important conditions to be performed by those who ultimately become members of the royal house, Jehovah announced as these: "If ye will obey my voice." Likewise those who shall be for ever in Jehovah's royal house must now be wholly obedient unto the Greater Moses, and there is no alternative.—Acts 3:23. W 6/15/34

**July 24**

(271)

*Look unto Abraham your father, and unto Sarah that bare you: for I called him alone.—Isa. 51: 2.*

Jehovah took Abraham into the land of Canaan and there used him to picture God himself, and Abraham's wife to picture God's organization, and their son Isaac to picture the promised Seed, whom God would use as his vindicator. Abraham's offering Isaac as a sacrifice foreshadowed that God would permit his beloved Son to be put to death at the hands of Satan and that Jehovah would demonstrate his supreme power and the vindication of his name by raising his Son out of death. That was a triumph to Jehovah and a vindication of his name. God provided that the death of his beloved Son should furnish the ransom price for man; but that goodness and loving-kindness toward mankind is secondary to the vindication of Jehovah's name. All who do believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and obey him, and who receive life, will be a vindication of Jehovah's name and his word. W 7/1/34

**July 25**

(210)

*Times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began. For Moses truly said . . . A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up.—Acts 3: 21, 22.*

All the prophets have "foretold of these days", to wit, of the restitution of the kingdom as God's instrument to vindicate his name; and the most important of all is the vindication of his name. The "restitution of all things" means the restitution of God's kingdom, which existed once in miniature, which had fallen down, and which is now set up in completion with Christ Jesus, the great Prophet, Priest and King on the throne. Immediately following the statement of "restitution of all things" the apostle quotes from the prophecy of Deuteronomy 18: 15-18 and definitely shows that Christ Jesus is the Greater Moses and that every one whom he gathers unto himself must now wholly obey God's Executive Officer. W 7/15/34

**July 26**

(144)

*If the slayer shall at any time come without the border of the city of his refuge, whither he was fled; . . . and the revenger of blood kill the slayer; he shall not be guilty of blood.—Num. 35:26, 27.*

If after receiving good from the Lord's hand any man of good will is found exercising too much personal liberty, that is to say, not keeping within the bounds of Jehovah's merciful provision made for him at the present time; not taking into consideration that he does not yet possess the right to life, but treats the favor of Jehovah lightly or ignores it, he loses the protection Jehovah has provided for him. He must continue to appreciate the certainty and nearness of Armageddon, at which time Satan's organization will be destroyed, and also that soon God's priestly company shall pass from the earth, and that then the Jonadab class may receive the gift of life through Jesus Christ if they continue steadfast on the side of the Lord and righteousness. W 8/15/34

**July 27**

(84)

*If it be so, our God, whom we serve, is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace; and he will deliver us out of thine hand, O king.—Dan. 3:17.*

Faithful witnesses will obey Jehovah's commandment to the very last and will not yield to the enemy nor be deterred by his threats of violence. Now is the time, and from this time forward, when the real crucial test of the faithful of God's witnesses is applied; and this pressure increases, and as it increases the faithful must hold fast. They know that Jehovah is all-powerful and that his purpose is certain to be accomplished. To be sure, they do not know what individuals amongst God's remnant are going through Armageddon, but they are sure, from his Word, that some of the remnant will pass through and thereafter perform some service on earth in the name of Jehovah. The purpose of such deliverance is a partial vindication of Jehovah's name. W 10/15/34

**July 28**

(132)

*Take unto you the whole armour of God.—Eph. 6:13.*

The description of the armor shows that the temple company must have the truth and faithfully serve it by being wholly obedient to God's great Prophet, Christ Jesus. They must be wholly and completely devoted to righteousness. They must be and remain at peace with each other and walk in unity and in peace. They must have absolute faith in God, make him their fear, and abide in his sanctuary regardless of what devils beset them and assault them. They must have an intelligent understanding of God's purpose, and for that reason must continue to feed upon the Word of truth, which Jehovah now reveals to them. They must at all times wield the "sword of the spirit, which is the word of God". All this they must have and do now in order to maintain their integrity toward Jehovah. They must at all times be fair to each other and stand firmly together for the cause of righteousness. W 9/15/34

**July 29**

(158)

*And the Lord did so; and there came a grievous swarm of flies into the house of Pharaoh.—Ex. 8:24.*

'Dead flies [Hebrew, zebub] cause an ointment to smell vile.' (Eccl. 10:1) The word *zebub* is from the Hebrew root meaning "to flit". According to Scripture, "*Baalzebub*" means "lord of the flitting one; the side-stepper; the great transgressor", that is, Satan himself. This term would apply to all who willingly act according to Satan's will. The whole world, or antitypical Egypt, lies under Satan the wicked one. The world has been terribly pestered by these flies, that is, Satan and his numerous invisible and visible agents, since the Lord's coming to the temple in 1918. The Lord Jesus appearing there in 1918 gathered unto himself the faithful and anointed them and sent them forth with his message of truth to be given as a testimony, which message has been and is a great pest to Satan's organization on earth. W 3/15/34

**July 30**

(56)

*Now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant.*

*—Heb. 8:6.*

At his baptism Jesus made and began the performance of his covenant by sacrifice, which performance was finished at Calvary. Because of his covenant by sacrifice, which sacrifice was holy and acceptable to God, Jesus is made the mediator of the new covenant. "The blood of Christ, who through the eternal spirit offered himself without spot to God, . . . And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament." (Heb. 9:14, 15) The church of Christ does not form any part of the mediator. Christ Jesus alone is the mediator of the new covenant. (Heb. 12:24) Christ Jesus is the mediator of the new covenant toward his own brethren, that is to say, spiritual Israel, during the period of time God is taking out from the nations a people for his name.—Acts 15:14. W 4/1/34

**July 31**

(47)

*Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints.*—Eph. 6:18.

Jehovah's witnesses are now in a tight place and must watch, and the Lord watches with them. There is unity of all in God's organization. Jehovah and Jesus Christ are one with those of the remnant, and hence all at the temple are one with Them, that is to say, all are deeply interested in the outcome of the test now upon the anointed. During this time of great danger the entire company of the remnant as representatives of the King of eternity keep themselves in an attitude of prayer and sober thoughtfulness lest they miss some opportunity of doing honor to the name of the Most High. The hour of great testing is upon Jehovah's witnesses. Thus they pray that they may at the opportune time open their mouths boldly and make known the purposes of Jehovah. W 12/15/34

August 1 (182)

*Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers.—Heb. 8: 8, 9.*

The covenant made in Egypt was made upon the sacrifice of a literal lamb with a human mediator. The terms of that covenant were afterwards written on stone tables and on parchment. The new covenant is different and will accomplish what the old covenant failed to accomplish. The nation of Israel had proved unfaithful to the law covenant, and therefore unworthy that the new covenant be made with them. Abraham's concubine Hagar had failed to bring forth unto him a seed acceptable to Jehovah; so likewise the typical covenant organization of Israel failed to bring forth a whole nation or people for Jehovah's name. Hence the new covenant is "not according to the covenant" made in Egypt. W 4/15/34

August 2 (270)

*The Lord said unto Moses, Come up to me into the mount, and be there: and I will give thee tables of stone, and a law, and commandments which I have written; that thou mayest teach them.—Ex. 24: 12.*

Jehovah there made Moses the teacher of those of his house. Mount Sinai, the place of the inauguration of the law covenant, pictured Mount Zion, God's organization, to which his people are gathered and where the new covenant is inaugurated. Now Jehovah by and through Christ Jesus, the Greater Moses, teaches the remnant on earth who are members of his house, and they, that is, the faithful ones, 'see their Teachers,' learn the truth from them, and rejoice. Jehovah spoke to Moses and directed him as mediator to speak to the people, and Jehovah commanded what they should do "in all places where I record my name". (Ex. 20: 24) This shows that the purpose of the covenant looked to the vindication of Jehovah's name. W 5/1/34

**August 3** (331)

*Able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit quickeneth—2 Cor. 3:6, margin.*

Merely written letters on books or laws written down cannot of themselves move one to a course resulting in God's approval, which quickeneth to life. It is the power of the holy spirit of God within one that can and does carry one along the way toward life. Let those of the temple now fully realize and appreciate the fact that they have been brought into the temple, anointed and instructed there, in order that they might serve as Jehovah's witnesses and thus minister unto the things for which they have been chosen and anointed. Individuals are clear out of sight so far as the temple company is concerned. All there are one body, instructed by the great Teachers for one and the same purpose and sent forth to participate in the work of vindicating Jehovah's name. W 5/15/34

**August 4** (252)

*All these were the children of Keturah. And Abraham gave all that he had unto Isaac. But unto the sons of the concubines, which Abraham had, Abraham gave gifts, and sent them away from Isaac his son.—Gen 25:4-6.*

The patriarch Abraham had one wife, named Sarah, and two concubines, the first of these being Hagar and the second Keturah. The six children of Abraham by Keturah picture those toward whom the new covenant was inaugurated after the birth of the kingdom, "the man child," and these are designated as 'other children of Zion that are born after the man child's birth'. "Before she travailed, she brought forth; before her pain came, she was delivered of a man child. Who hath heard such a thing? who hath seen such things? Shall the earth be made to bring forth in one day? or shall a nation be born at once? for as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children." (Isa. 66:7, 8) These other children constitute a people for Jehovah's name. W 6/1/34

**August 5** (230)

*Ye yourselves saw all that Jehovah did before your eyes . . . yet hath Jehovah not given unto you a heart to know, or eyes to see, or ears to hear, until this day.*

—Deut. 29:2-4, Roth.

Before the making of the covenant in Moab the issue of the name and supremacy of Jehovah was not perceived. Likewise before the building up of Zion and taking the remnant into the temple God's selected people did not perceive the great issue. When the King had come to his throne, in 1914, and the faithful remnant were gathered unto him at the temple, they perceived for the first time the great issue of Jehovah's name, and thereafter they are known as the Lord's willing ones in the day of his power: "Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power, in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning." (Ps. 110:3) Fear of that great and terrible name is necessary to continued faithfulness.—Deut. 28:58. W 6/15/34

**August 6** (60)

*Thou art the Lord the God, who didst choose Abram, . . . and madest a covenant with him.*—Neh. 9:7, 8.

The Abrahamic covenant is God's unchangeable expression of his purpose to produce a seed, which seed is his beloved Son, and who would maintain his integrity toward God, and who because of faithfulness unto death should receive the highest place in all of God's organization, be made Jehovah's great High Priest and the Vindicator of his holy name. Jesus' resurrection from death, his exaltation, and the giving to him of a name above all creation, and Jehovah's declaration that every knee shall bow to him and every tongue confess his name, to the glory of God, is proof that the primary purpose of the Abrahamic covenant is to show that Jehovah is the only true and almighty God, the Giver of every good and perfect gift. His provision to give life to obedient ones of the human race through Christ Jesus is of secondary importance to that of the vindication of his name. W 7/1/34

**August 7** (238)

*After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down.—Acts 15:16.*

When Jehovah by Moses made the covenant of faithfulness in Moab, he told the Israelites that he would choose for them a 'king from amongst their brethren'. (Deut. 17:15) Later the promise was confined to the house of David and David was put upon the throne as king. Later that typical royal house (tabernacle) fell down. Then by his prophet (Amos 9:11) Jehovah said: "In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof; and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old." The words "in that day" refer to the day of Jehovah beginning with 1914, when he sent Jesus forth to rule. Thus the time for rebuilding David's tabernacle is fixed as at the coming of the Lord Jesus to the temple in 1918 and the building up of Zion to the glory of Jehovah. W 7/15/34

**August 8** (183)

*He should have remained in the city of his refuge until the death of the high priest; but after the death of the high priest the slayer shall return into the land of his possession.—Num. 35:28.*

Why is one in danger of death who has placed himself on the Lord's side and who then departs therefrom and returns to Satan's organization? Because he has learned that Jehovah alone can give life and will give it to man through Christ Jesus, and that there is no other way of getting life; and having learned these good things, he must show his appreciation thereof by faithfully abiding with the Lord and serving him. Such ones do not come within the provisions of God's new covenant, and life cannot be granted to them till the last member of the priestly class has finished his earthly course. "Death of the high priest" means the change of the last members of God's royal priesthood from human to spirit organism, which follows Armageddon. W 8/15/34

**August 9**

(108)

*But if not, be it known unto thee, O king, that we will not serve thy gods, nor worship the golden image which thou hast set up.—Dan. 3:18.*

In all probability some of God's remnant will be killed by the enemy at and during Armageddon. Hence Satan would think God cannot deliver them. These things do not deter the faithful remnant in performing their duty as the Lord commands. Immediate deliverance from the fiery furnace of persecution and strife would not answer the Devil's false charge, but their holding fast their integrity toward God and trusting him implicitly come what may, even unto a tormenting death, will answer that false and wicked challenge that Satan has hurled into Jehovah's face. Such faithfulness by Jehovah's witnesses is an exhibition of devotion to principle and shows that these are not moved by passion. Such is not "character development", but is covenant-keeping to the very bitter end. W 10/15/34

**August 10**

(55)

*Being ready always to give answer to every man that asketh you a reason concerning the hope that is in you, yet with meekness and fear.—1 Pet. 3:15, A.R.V.*

Such a question could not be propounded unless testimony by word of mouth is given causing men to ask questions. This shows that one must preach both by word of mouth and by the course of action to those with whom he comes in contact. A good conscience is kept by so doing, regardless of being misunderstood by others. (1 Pet. 3:16) Jehovah's witnesses must go contrary to the world, showing forth the praises of Jehovah, and thus doing they are looked upon as and called evildoers. They must be preachers by word of mouth and by their consistent course of action. The proof comes to others that these are not evildoers when God takes occasion to prove to false accusers that those whom they have accused have been and are his faithful witnesses. W 9/15/34

**August 11** (323)

*This is the interpretation of the thing: M'ne [=“Reckoned-up”], God hath reckoned up thy reign and ended it.—Dan. 5:26, Roth.*

Jehovah numbered not only typical Babylon, but also Satan's organization, the Greater Babylon. The first “Mene” fixed the end of the times of the Gentiles or the beginning of the “time of the end” for Babylon as at A.D. 1914. The seven symbolic “times”, each of 360 years, began with Jerusalem's destruction by typical Babylon in B.C. 606 and would necessarily end 2,520 years thereafter, to wit, A.D. 1914. The second “Mene” would apply to the finishing or end of Satan's organization: “God hath numbered thy kingdom, and brought it to an end.” (A.R.V.) The final end comes at Armageddon, just before which the witness work must be completed. The message, first promulgated at Columbus, Ohio, in 1931, and which appears in the booklet *The Kingdom the Hope of the World*, gave forth the notice and warning to “Christendom's” rulers. W 11/15/34

**August 12** (47)

*Have mercy upon Zion: for the time to favour her, yea, the set time, is come. For thy servants take pleasure in her stones, and favour the dust thereof.—Ps. 102:13, 14.*

The dust of Egypt became lice. Pharaoh's agents, unable to produce lice, had to admit to him, “This is the finger of God.” Modern opposers of God see themselves as unclean and that those devoted to Jehovah are clean and nothing can be found against them except their devotion to Jehovah. Separated from “Christendom” and devoted entirely to God, the remnant are as the dust of God's organization, meaning the earthly part thereof and which in God's due time is cleansed. Jehovah has mercy upon Zion, that is, the visible members thereof, and favors them by cleansing them; and his servants take pleasure in the faithful members of his organization. In Zion the dust of the earth is not lousy, like Egypt, but clean. W 3/15/34

**August 13**

(63)

*Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech: and not as Moses, which put a veil over his face.—2 Cor. 3: 12, 13.*

The law covenant, having failed, was cast away. Now the new covenant does produce the "people for his name", which people are used to reflect the Lord's glory. That glory which shines in the face of the Lord Jesus is greater than that which was made to shine in Moses' face. At the time Paul wrote, the glory was still in the future. It was not seen in his day, but is seen at the inauguration of the new covenant. During the period of waiting for the appearing of such glory, and seeing we have such hope, says the apostle, "we use great boldness of speech." (R.V.) He was not ashamed, because "hope maketh not ashamed". If Paul used plainness or boldness of speech then, how much more now should the Lord's anointed speak with boldness in this day of judgment! W 5/15/34

**August 14**

(198)

*O Daniel, servant of the living God, is thy God, whom thou servest continually, able to deliver thee from the lions?—Dan. 6: 20.*

To carry out his purpose to complete vindication of his name Jehovah permits his servants to suffer even unto a sacrificial death; all of which is precious in his sight. "Precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of his saints." Not that he is unable to prevent the suffering of the faithful, but he must be faithful and true to his own word and then in due time exercise his power in behalf of those whose hearts are perfect toward him. The faithful are now in the midst of the "wild beasts" that control this world. Like King Darius, Jehovah now asks a similar question of his witnesses in order to afford them an opportunity to acknowledge their protection and deliverance and that this is entirely due to Jehovah's loving-kindness and power exercised toward them. W 12/15/34

**August 15**

(190)

*Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse.—Mal 3:10.*

Those toward whom the new covenant is inaugurated were gathered into the temple and taken into the kingdom covenant and are at unity with Christ. They must all continue in unity in faithfulness and service. Individual desires or opinions are not at all to be considered. They having become members of God's organization, individuality of creatures ceases and any opinions held by them contrary to God's expressed will are wrong. The first thing to be considered is what is God's will, and all in the covenant for the kingdom must joyfully and harmoniously and obediently respond to his will. Those who take a different course, hence a lawless course, are certain to be gathered out of the kingdom. Only those who maintain integrity, continuing in unity and faithfulness in Christ, will shine forth as the sun when the others are gathered out. (Matt. 13:41-43) Their all must be and will be wholly devoted to Jehovah. W 6/15/34

**August 16**

(86)

*Just and true are thy ways, thou King.—Rev. 15:3.*

The city of refuge does not violate the divine decree of justice. Those who now exercise faith in the blood of Jesus and devote themselves to God as an evidence of their faith, but who are not accepted as a part of Christ's sacrifice, find refuge in God's organization until the time arrives for Christ's shed blood to make full satisfaction for the sins these have committed and the blessings of life begin. The responsibility of the manslayer who slew unwittingly does not cease during the time he abides in the city of refuge, God's organization. Being compelled to wait there until the high priest's death shows he is a fugitive and his protection depends upon his abiding with the High Priest, Christ Jesus, but that the innocent blood of the High Priest shed for mankind's sins atones for the sins of the one who has found refuge in God's organization. W 8/15/34

**August 17**

(28)

*Israel didst thou make thine own people for ever; and thou, Lord, becamest their God.—1 Chron. 17:22.*

Jehovah set the stage in Egypt to make a picture showing forth his purpose to vindicate his name. His gathering to himself and separating to himself a people is not merely to save them, but that he might have a people for his name. His salvation of them depends upon their obedience in performing the duties assigned to them. Before he would bring forth the 'Seed of promise' Jehovah pictured how he would take out a people for his name; this he did with the covenant made in Egypt and ratified at Sinai. The imperfect and sinful nation of Israel could not be a people wholly for Jehovah's name until the promised Seed came; therefore the law covenant was added "because of transgressions [that is, imperfection and sin], till the seed [Christ Jesus] should come to whom the promise was made". (Gal. 3:17, 19) He must come before a people could be taken out for God's name. W 7/1/34

**August 18**

(19)

*It is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well doing than for evil doing.—1 Pet. 3:17.*

"Because Christ also suffered for sins once, the righteous for the unrighteous, that he might bring us to God; being put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the spirit." (1 Pet. 3:18, A.R.V.) God's faithful servants will be brought into conditions causing suffering. Such is God's will in order to afford an opportunity for them to maintain their integrity toward him. God does not send the suffering, but the faithful ones, suffering for righteousness and for doing right, prove their integrity. Suffering was not required of Christ Jesus to provide the ransom price. In maintaining his integrity toward God he suffered injustice to be heaped upon him. He suffered and remained faithful to God, and thus proved himself entirely faithful. Because of his faithfulness Jehovah raised him up out of death. W 9/15/34

**August 19**

(89)

*Nebuchadnezzar came near to the mouth of the burning fiery furnace, and spake, and said, Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, ye servants of the most high God, come forth, and come hither.—Dan. 3:26.*

Here Nebuchadnezzar pictures the world's new over-lord in whose hand regal power is now placed. Christ the King will have proved the integrity of his servants and the supremacy of Jehovah at Armageddon. Now, as Nebuchadnezzar called forth the three men, even so Christ Jesus calls forth the faithful to his service. The coming forth of Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego from the midst of the fire pictures the survivors of the remnant who pass through Armageddon and who perform some service on earth thereafter. In the fight at Armageddon it will be actually seen that not men are doing the fighting, but it is the Son of Jehovah God, Christ Jesus, who does the fighting and vindicates Jehovah's name. Satan's crowd will be confounded; the remnant will be saved and rejoice. W 10/15/34

**August 20**

(180)

*Let every man borrow of his neighbour, and every woman of her neighbour, jewels of silver, and jewels of gold. And the Lord gave the people favour in the sight of the Egyptians—Ex. 11:2, 3.*

Borrowing articles from the Egyptians was not merely for self-adornment, but for use in the Lord's service by the Israelites. This seems to mean that it is right and proper now for Jehovah's witnesses to apply for and use any and all of the facilities that the worldly rulers now control and to use them in order for the furthering of the witness work for the kingdom. Borrowing from the Egyptians would also include receiving money by Jehovah's witnesses in the way of contribution for literature distributed, and then using that money to prepare and publish more literature. This is conclusive proof that Jehovah's witnesses are not engaged in a commercial enterprise, such as hawking and bookselling. W 3/15/34

August 21

(186)

*There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.—1 Tim. 2:5.*

This does not mean that the man Christ Jesus is mediator for ALL men. It does say that there is one God, who is Jehovah, and there is one mediator between God and men. What men? The men, that is, human creatures, who have exercised faith in Christ Jesus and agreed to do God's will. Why should God appoint a mediator in behalf of men who defame his name and the name of Jesus Christ? The text shows that the apostle was addressing Timothy, and hence others of like precious faith. It follows, therefore, that the word "men" does not refer to all men of the world but does refer to those who have made a covenant to do the will of God; and concerning all such it is the will of God that they be saved and come to an accurate knowledge of the truth; and for all such there is a mediator in the covenant with God. W 4/1/34

August 22

(326)

*And not as Moses, which put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished.—2 Cor. 3:13.*

To obscure the shining in his face Moses put on a veil. The Jews gloried in a man, one of their own blood relation; hence they did not see that the glory of Moses as mediator and inaugurator of the law covenant was temporary, which glory ended when the covenant ended. The purpose of the glory upon Moses' face was to foretell in a miniature way the coming glory of the greater mediator, Christ Jesus, the inaugurator of the better covenant. But the Jews did not look in that direction, or to that "end"; hence they rejected Christ when he came, and do still reject him. The veil over Moses' shining face correspondingly shows that Christ Jesus, Jehovah's great priest, veils the truth from the eyes of those that oppose God's Word at the present time. W 5/15/34

**August 23** (50)

*Abraham, who is the father of us all, . . . like unto him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were*—Rom. 4: 16, 17, margin.

Abraham was a hundred years old when Isaac was born. His body then was "as good as dead" so far as children were concerned. For that reason Jehovah must and did exercise his miraculous power that Abraham might have six sons by Keturah. By Jehovah's miraculous power Jesus was conceived in the virgin's womb and later born. Thirty years thereafter by that miraculous power Jesus Christ was brought forth as the antitypical Isaac, the 'seed of promise'. Approximately 1900 years later, to wit, 1914, the "man child" (God's kingdom under Christ) was born of God's woman or organization, and this also by Jehovah's miraculous power. By the like exercise of his power, Zion, his "woman", like Keturah, brought forth other children, in 1918 and following years. W 6/1/34

**August 24** (4)

*Ye shall hew down the graven images of their gods, and destroy the names of them out of that place. Ye shall not do so unto the Lord your God.*—Deut. 12: 3, 4.

In the covenant made with Israel in Moab Jehovah foretold his requirements of the remnant today. They must be a separate people, and not conformed to this world. (Vss. 29-32) They must not commit adultery; and adultery of spiritual Israelites means chiefly illicit relationship with Satan's organization. There must be none of this with God's people. They are not even to touch the unclean thing, Satan's organization, nor to compromise with the world, but must be wholly for God and for his kingdom. (Deut. 22: 13-30 ; 7: 1-5) They shall not depend upon worldly help, but must lend the truth to all who desire it. They must maintain their integrity toward God, which will be tested by their consistent praise to Jehovah or by reproach upon his holy name.—Deut. 15: 6 ; 29: 24-28. W 7/1/34

**August 25**

(14)

*The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken.—Deut. 18:15.*

It was in Moab that Moses first divulged Jehovah's promise to raise up a Prophet of whom Moses was merely a shadow or type. Not until the bringing of God's remnant into the temple was the truth revealed to them that Christ Jesus alone is that great Prophet. The preeminence of Jehovah's prophet is foretold in the words recorded in Deuteronomy 34:10-12 in connection with the covenant made in Moab. Therefore those to whom the Greater Moses is sent are under far greater responsibility than natural Israel was ever under. The remnant, now being informed of the great issue that is to be settled, and being in the kingdom covenant, see that there can be no compromise with any part of Satan's organization, but that they must be unreservedly and absolutely devoted to and obedient to Jehovah and his great Prophet. W 6/15/34

**August 26**

(252)

*Hearken unto me: Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name. And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written.—Acts 15:13-15.*

Then the apostle James quoted from the prophet Amos. This prophecy of Amos must be fulfilled at some time, and the tabernacle of David must be builded up. But before the building of that tabernacle and the completion of Jehovah's capital organization, he declares his purpose to take out from the nations a people for his name, which people so taken out must be witnesses to his name. When these are taken out, then he would set up his kingdom, that is, set up Zion as his dwelling-place, and he would build the tabernacle of David which had fallen down. This work constitutes exactly what Simeon Peter called "restitution of all things" spoken by the mouth of all the holy prophets since the world began. W 7/15/34

**August 27** (21)

*So ye shall not pollute the land wherein ye are; for blood it defileth the land: and the land cannot be cleansed of the blood that is shed therein, but by the blood of him that shed it.—Num. 35:33.*

The sword of Jehovah wielded in righteousness at Armageddon, and that alone, will satisfy divine justice. God is no respecter of persons. (Num. 35:31) Innocent blood wrongfully spilled, whether by the unwitting slayer or by the deliberate murderer, pollutes the land. There is but one way of cleansing it. Money or other bloodless ransom price will avail nothing. Blood must literally flow at Armageddon to wash away the defiling which now stains the whole earth. Christ's blood does not atone for deliberate breaking of God's everlasting covenant unless the one breaking it fully repents, exercises faith in Jesus' shed blood by full consecration to do Jehovah's will, and commits himself wholly to God and his service. W 8/15/34

**August 28** (158)

*Christ . . . put to death in the flesh, but quickened in the spirit: in which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison.—1 Pet. 3: 18, 19, R V.*

During the three days that Jesus was dead, to be sure, he did not go anywhere. After his resurrection to life as a spirit creature divine, and between that and the time of his ascension into heaven, a period of forty days elapsed. He appeared in a human organism several times to his brethren, but only for a few minutes on each occasion. The Scriptures are silent as to where he was during the other part of that forty days. There seems to be no reason why he might not have gone to the "land of Magog" and there addressed a message directly to the spirit creatures restrained in prison that had sinned in Noah's day and that have since been held in prison by Satan. He certainly had the power to do whatsoever he might choose to do in harmony with the will of God. W 9/15/34

**August 29** (290)

*That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise.—1 Pet. 1: 7.*

God permits the enemy to go to the limit. No creature can make a test so hard but that Jehovah can prove it entirely without effect. It was so when Elijah made a test by fire before Ahab and made it just as hard as possible by having barrels of water poured over the sacrifice and the trenches round the altar filled with water before the fire came down upon it. Such a severe test increases the creature's faith and brings greater glory to Jehovah manifesting his supreme power. The test upon the remnant near the end will be more severe then than at any time past; but let all be assured that Jehovah will provide all needed protection and comfort for his own. He cannot be defeated; he will give victory to his faithful ones through Jesus Christ our Lord. W 10/15/34

**August 30** (57)

*Neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the gospel of the grace of God.—Acts 20: 24.*

Compared to life everlasting with the Lord the faithful remnant count not their present existence at all dear to them, having always in mind their privilege of proving true and faithful to Jehovah. The testimony of Jesus Christ has been committed to them, and they know they must fight to the finish. And in this conflict they have confidence that Jehovah will send his angel before them to protect and deliver them to the praise and honor of his holy name. (Dan. 6: 22) They are now engaged in a righteous and holy war against a host of unseen wicked ones. (Eph. 6: 12) These are using earthly creatures as their visible instruments for persecution. In themselves the remnant have no strength, but in Christ Jesus they are invulnerable and shall gain the victory. W 12/15/34

August 31

(273)

*He sent Moses his servant . . . He spake, and there came divers sorts of flies.—Ps. 105: 26, 31.*

Jehovah's witnesses go about the country preaching the gospel of God's kingdom, which message is of great annoyance to Satan's crowd and bites them and plagues them like numerous flies. "Christendom's" rulers claim to be God's representatives. If they were honest they would welcome Jehovah's witnesses. Instead, they side-step the questions presented by these witnesses and declare Jehovah's witnesses to be peddlers, hawkers, and not preachers of the gospel. The world rulers claim they have no objection to anyone's worshiping God according to their own ideas, but denounce Jehovah's witnesses and evade the real issue by declaring them to be engaged in a commercial enterprise instead of teaching the gospel. The truth plagues them so thoroughly that they must make some apparent plausible objection thereto. W 3/15/34

September 1

(217)

*God our Saviour, who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.—1 Tim. 2: 3, 4.*

This means "all men" coming into God's organization. Surely the apostle was not exhorting and advising that prayer be made for all those who wickedly oppose God and Christ Jesus. He does advise that prayer be made "for kings and for all that are in authority". (Verses 1, 2) Surely not all men in authority in Satan's organization; but those in the church whom the Lord had placed in positions of authority. Prayer should be made for all such that all the church might abide together in peace and unity. Concerning those who have exercised faith in Christ Jesus and entered into a covenant to do God's will, it is not His will that any of such be lost. If any of them are lost it is their own fault. This is proved by Jesus' words concerning the twelve which God gave to him. W 4/1/34

### September 2

(262)

*For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind.*—Heb. 8: 10.

“After those days,” meaning after the law covenant had ended and become old, God makes a new covenant with the house of Israel and Judah. The Jew was cast off, and at that moment the law covenant ended and hence became old. The new covenant was made the next day, as stated by Jesus; and the very moment the old covenant ended it became old, and immediately following God made the new covenant with Christ Jesus. The new covenant was made with Jesus in behalf of whom? The answer is, the entire house of spiritual Israel, that is to say, all the spirit-begotten ones. This covenant is not with any of the natural descendants of Jacob, but in behalf of all who become righteous by faith in Christ. Putting the laws in their minds prepares them to be God’s witnesses. W 4/15/34

### September 3

(273)

*Who, then, is the king of glory? Jehovah, strong and mighty, Jehovah, mighty in battle.*—Ps. 24: 8, Roth. Pss.

Jehovah engages in battle for his name’s sake. The battle that will completely vindicate his name will be the “battle of that great day of God Almighty”, fought at the place he has chosen and hence called the “battle of Armageddon”. He assembles his own forces and maneuvers the enemy to come up against them for battle. The “King of eternity”, whose name alone is Jehovah, has made Christ Jesus his chief officer and executioner of judgment and has sent him forth to engage the enemy in battle for the purpose of vindicating his great and holy name. “To Jehovah belongeth the earth and the fulness thereof.” The prophet propounds the question: Who shall be in His holy organization and witness the King’s triumph? Jehovah answers: “The clean of hands and pure of heart . . . shall bear away a blessing from Jehovah, and vindication from his delivering God.”—Vss. 4, 5. W 1/1/35

## September 4

(289)

*Nevertheless, when it [he, Roth.] shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away. Now the Lord is that Spirit.—2 Cor. 3: 16, 17.*

When Moses went before the Lord to speak to him "he took the veil off". (Ex. 34: 34, 35) When there is a turning away from a man and a turning to Jehovah God with full trust in him and the Lord Jesus, the "veil" is taken away from the eyes of such as have the Lord's spirit, and these have an understanding. The one turning to the Lord, therefore, is given a vision of His reflected glory, which glory is reflected in the face of Christ Jesus and shines into the heart and mind of those fully devoted to the Lord. Christ Jesus is "the brightness of his glory". But where those who have covenanted to do the will of God continue to look to a man and his supposed glorious attainments and dote upon his teachings, they are blind to the truth. W 5/15/34

## September 5

(18)

*And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.—Gal. 3: 29.*

The question is, How do they get into Christ? Clearly by adoption. Adoption means to bring another son into the family. The body members of Christ picture a part of the seed of Abraham by virtue of being brought into Christ Jesus and received and adopted into the house of God, of which Christ Jesus is the Chief and Head. They do not get into Christ's body by reason of anything they do. In the fullness of time God sent forth Jesus "to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ". (Gal. 4: 4-7) It was God's purpose from the beginning to bring these other sons into his family by adoption. —Eph. 1: 5. W 6/1/34

**September 6**

(119)

*Ye shall not do after all the things that we do here this day, every man whatsoever is right in his own eyes.*

—Deut. 12: 8.

Some persons who have been brought into Zion and anointed have failed to see the necessity of being entirely obedient to the instructions coming to them through God's organization. They do not appreciate the fact that the Lord Jesus is the head of Zion and that the instructions come from him. Those heady ones insist on doing 'whatsoever is right in their own sight', and such is against the commandment of the Lord. Jehovah's name can be honored only by doing his will, and not by following the will of any man. "When ye go over Jordan, . . . then there shall be a place which the Lord your God shall choose, to cause his name to dwell there; thither shall ye bring all that I command you; . . . offer not thy burnt offerings in every place that thou seest."—Vss. 10-13. W 6/15/34

**September 7**

(307)

*Now the Lord is the Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.*—2 Cor. 3: 17, R.V.

One in Christ Jesus is not licensed to do anything he wants to, but must be obedient to the Lord and his organization. Liberty does not mean license. Where there is truly the spiritually minded condition existing among those begotten of the spirit these are free from the bondage such as the Jews were in. The spirit of the Lord is upon and among his anointed ones, who are in the temple. There are many who claim to be in present truth who are in fact under bondage to fear of Satan's organization. This condition does not, however, apply to those who are in the temple. Says the apostle: "But Jerusalem [God's organization] which is above is free, which is the mother of us all." Therefore those anointed and in the temple are not in bondage to any worldly power as though such worldly powers were the "higher powers". Their boldness in declaring the truth is proof of their liberty in Christ. W 5/15/34

**September 8**

(283)

*The angel of the Lord appeared unto him, and said unto him, The Lord is with thee, thou mighty man of valour. And Gideon said unto him, Oh my Lord.—Judg. 6: 12, 13.*

Gideon was of the same tribe as Elisha. His name means "tree feller", that is, warrior who throws down living creatures pictured by trees. In this he represented Christ Jesus, Jehovah's Vindicator, who wars against and throws down creatures that oppose Jehovah and reproach his holy name. At this point Gideon more particularly represents the faithful remnant, for the reason that they, and not Christ Jesus, needed to be assured that Jehovah was with them. To Gideon the angel said: "Jehovah is with thee, thou mighty man of valor." And now the faithful ones on earth gathered unto the Lord have from him this message. "I am with you, saith Jehovah." (Hag. 1: 13, A.R.V.) These are men of valor because of being with Christ Jesus and marching under his leadership. W 1/1/35

**September 9**

(101)

*Every soul, which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.—Acts 3: 23.*

The Greater Moses came straightway to the temple and gathered Jehovah's saints unto him and then brought into the kingdom covenant those who had up to that point of time proved their faithfulness. Thereafter the Greater Moses, Christ Jesus, as Jehovah's instrument began to unfold to the remnant the meaning of prophecy, and it becomes a matter of choice for them to choose between Jehovah's great Prophet or the Devil's mouthpiece and representative. Many who think they represent God are in fact Satan's instruments. As many of the natural Israelites became unfaithful, even so now there are those in line for the kingdom who become unfaithful, and these fail to give heed to the Greater Prophet. Those in line for the kingdom who now fail or refuse to render whole-hearted and loving obedience to Christ will come to a disastrous end.—Deut. 18: 13-19. W 6/15/34

**September 10**

(180)

*Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time.—1 Pet. 5: 6.*

Those in the kingdom covenant must all come to the condition of unity in Jehovah's organization and be obedient to organization instructions, which instructions proceed from the temple. Being at unity, they will have confidence one in another and seek always to do good one to the other. They shall no longer do "every man whatsoever is right in his own eyes", but observe order and proceed with the work assigned to them, offering their sacrifice of praise to God. (Deut. 12: 8-14) Let all of the remnant now beware lest they fail because of headiness or desire to follow their own ideas as to how God's work should be done. Jehovah's service must be at his chosen place, where he put his name, his temple organization. That service must be regularly and faithfully performed, and in the manner he has pointed out. W 7/1/34

**September 11**

(258)

*By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord; . . . In thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice.—Gen. 22: 16-18.*

The blessing of the people is announced in the purpose of Jehovah. That expressed purpose first states that God will select a seed, and by and through that seed 'all families of the earth shall be blessed'. That declared purpose of Jehovah, which is called the Abrahamic covenant, is the only covenant pertaining to the blessing of the people, and that covenant is not made with any creature. It is the unconditional promise of Jehovah, made doubly sure and binding by his word and oath, when he says: "By myself have I sworn, saith Jehovah." What did Jehovah swear that he would do? Bring forth a seed that shall possess the gate of his enemies, and that in that seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed. The seed must first come, and through the seed the blessing would come. W 7/15/34

**September 12**

(148)

*Then was the part of the hand sent from him; and this writing was written. And this is the writing that was written, Mene, Mene, Tekel, Upharsin.—Dan. 5: 24, 25.*

The Lord Jesus at the temple as Jehovah's chief executive officer has caused warning to be given to "Christendom" time and again. It was the finger of Almighty God, that is, his beloved Son Christ Jesus, that wrote upon the wall of Belshazzar's banquet hall. Since Jehovah has now poured out his spirit upon all his faithful witnesses he has sent forth these witnesses and used them to write his message of truth upon the "wall" of reveling "Christendom"; but the rulers have ignored and despised the message and wickedly persecuted the messengers. It is God's will that "Christendom" be told concerning the words and their meaning, and particularly as from A.D. 1926 to 1929, when his message was delivered to "Christendom" in fulfillment of these mysterious words. W 11/15/34

**September 13**

(210)

*He shall abide in it unto the death of the high priest, which was anointed with the holy oil. . . . But after the death of the high priest the slayer shall return into the land of his possession.—Num. 35: 25, 28.*

Christ, the great Avenger, will not spare any of the Jonadab company that get outside of Jehovah's safety arrangement for them in connection with his organization. For such to venture outside would mean disaster at the hand of Jehovah's great Executioner. They will not be permitted to run ahead of Jehovah, upon the theory that, having once accepted the truth, they may henceforth be entirely safe regardless of whatsoever course they take. They must abide by Jehovah's law and await his due time to fully deliver them and give them life. They must be thankful now for the provision he has made for their protection and show their gratitude and appreciation by doing what the Lord has commanded. W 8/15/34

**September 14**

(98)

*The Lord looked upon him, and said, Go in this thy might, and thou shalt save Israel from the hand of the Midianites: have not I sent thee?—Judg. 6: 14.*

Gideon represented particularly Jehovah's mighty officer, Christ Jesus. As to God's remnant Gideon's natural weakness pictured that these are strong not in themselves but because of faith and devotion to Jehovah, "strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might." These receive the command to go forth in the Lord's strength and declare the day of his vengeance. This they began to do after 1922. They have appreciated that they are sent forth by the Lord and in his strength. Now in this day Jehovah's witnesses well know that they are not sent forth by man, nor has any man or men the right or authority to commission them to preach the message of God's kingdom, and for this reason they do not ask or apply for human authorization. They have heard the Lord's command. W 1/1/35

**September 15**

(10)

*Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye. . . . We ought to obey God rather than men.—Acts 4: 19; 5: 29.*

As the apostle said, even so now the faithful remnant say to those who demand that they cease bearing testimony to Jehovah's name. They are blind to everything except Jehovah's commandment given through Christ Jesus. There can be no bowing down by them to Satan or any part of his organization, nor will they compromise by trying to soft-pedal the kingdom message toward the enemy organization. It is God's message and he has commanded it to be delivered, and he will see to it that it is delivered by those who maintain their integrity toward him. The day of his vengeance must be declared; his witnesses must make the declaration. Let such now gird up the mind and with grim determination and full confidence in Jehovah and his King stand firm, never yielding. W 10/15/34

**September 16**

(108)

*My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me; forasmuch as before him innocency was found in me.—Dan. 6: 22.*

The faithful remnant know that Christ Jesus, the mighty Angel of Jehovah, is present and is accompanied by his host of holy angels and is charged with the preservation of those faithful to the Most High. The lions in the den belonged to the king, hence represented Jehovah's justice. They could not destroy Jehovah's faithful servant, nor will God's justice today destroy those faithful and true to him. The malicious enemy may kill the body of some of the faithful, but the everlasting existence of these anointed ones is in the hand of the Most High and nothing can pluck them out. In these days of wicked conspiracy against God's anointed the beastly element that now rules the earth would quickly destroy them save for God's protecting them through his angels. W 12/15/34

**September 17**

(26)

*If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.—John 8: 36.*

The Lord's faithful ones refuse to recognize the rulers of this world as the "higher powers". They refuse to compromise with the powers of Satan's organization, and refuse to ask them for or to accept permits from Satan's organization to preach the gospel of God's kingdom. They obey God, and not man, because they are free from bondage of man and man-made organizations ruled by Satan. It is only where the spirit of the Lord is that there is such liberty; and such is the meaning of the apostle's words at 2 Corinthians 3:17. All those in Christ and in the new covenant, taken out as a people for the name of Jehovah, are, however, bound to be fully and wholly obedient to the great Prophet, Christ Jesus. Since the instruction to the remnant proceeds from the Lord at the temple, all of the temple company must wholly obey organization instructions from him. W 5/15/34

**September 18**

(196)

*Pharaoh called for Moses and for Aaron, and said, Go ye, sacrifice to your God in the land.—Ex. 8: 25.*

Otherwise stated, Pharaoh, so greatly annoyed by the plague of flies, was willing that the Israelites might do some worshiping, but they must do it according to the Egyptians' ideas and in the presence of the Egyptians. Now the antitypical Egyptians, the representatives of Satan on earth, say to Jehovah's witnesses, in substance, 'We have no objection to your worshiping your God, but do it in the church buildings (our "land"), as others do, and refrain from interfering with our commercial business or annoying our people by going from house to house.' Moses told Pharaoh that for Israelites to sacrifice before the Egyptians would be an abomination to God. Likewise Jehovah's remnant today reply to the modern Egyptians: 'We must obey God and not man; we will follow his commandments and obey the Higher Powers.' W 3/15/34

**September 19**

(253)

*Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee.—Isa. 26: 3.*

This promise is conditionally provided for those who keep the mind stayed upon and trust Jehovah. That means to learn his purpose and to be diligent in obeying his commandments. As the day of battle approaches the trials will be greater, but the faithful will remember that the battle is Jehovah's and that he cannot be defeated. With the coming of unity in the church there must be peace within God's organization. Those provoking confusion, strife and controversies, if ever in the temple, will not remain very long. The King's angels will see to that. There must be and will be peace within God's organization although the enemy continues with increased fury to assault and persecute. Peace of mind and prosperity will be the portion of those who fully and unselfishly devote themselves unto the Lord. W 1/15/35

**September 20**

(74)

*A God of truth and without iniquity, just and right  
is he They have corrupted themselves.—Deut. 32:4, 5.*

All who receive Jehovah's approval as his chosen people must maintain integrity toward him. This is the very thing the Devil said that man could not do; but the faithful will prove that they can do it. The song of Moses at Moab magnifies the greatness of God's name. Therein Jehovah's integrity, his blamelessness and irreproachableness are declared: "He is the Rock, his work [including the remnant taken out for his name] is perfect." Crookedness, lawlessness or corruption in any of God's professed people cannot be attributed to Jehovah, but it must be said of such, "Their spot [stain or blemish] is not the spot of his children [Jehovah's faithful ones]: they [the lawless ones, elective elders who insist on doing their own selfish way, the 'man of sin'] are a perverse and crooked [not Jehovah's] generation." W 6/15/34

**September 21**

(130)

*In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David  
that is fallen, and close up the breaches . . . , and  
I will build it as in the days of old.—Amos 9:11.*

In 1918 Christ Jesus, the antitypical David, at the command of Jehovah, gathered together the saints and built up Zion, Jesus himself being laid as the chief corner stone therein. Christ Jesus, the great Priest and King, takes charge of God's people. "The dead in Christ," that is to say, those faithful men such as the apostles, were raised first and made a part of Zion, the tabernacle of David, which once existed and fell down and is now restored and set up. (1 Thess. 4:15, 16) At the time Jesus came and builded up Zion there stood in his presence a number of persons who were in line for the kingdom, and at his judgment of such the approved ones were taken into the temple and, by the command of the Lord Jesus, these formed the "faithful and wise servant" class. W 7/15/34

**September 22**

(101)

*It came to pass the same night, that the Lord said unto him, . . . Throw down the altar of Baal that thy father hath, and cut down the grove.—Judg. 6:25.*

Baal's altar was then and is now the "table of devils". The covenant under which Gideon had been born required destruction of images of false gods. Gideon must be wholly for Jehovah; hence he must destroy that altar. Christ Jesus, the Greater Gideon, makes no compromise with the Devil, but boldly and uncompromisingly declares Jehovah's message. All members of the 'elect servant' class must likewise come out boldly, exclusively and undividedly on God's side. Unfaithful ones frequently say to the faithful and bold: "Why say so much about the Devil and his organization? Why not just preach only the message of God's love?" The Devil has attempted to lull to sleep those who have covenanted to do God's will. The faithful in this day must be bold, unequivocal. W 1/15/35

**September 23**

(309)

*Take no ransom for him that is fled to his city of refuge, that he should come again to dwell in the land, until the death of the priest.—Num. 35:32, R.V.*

Jehovah's law cannot be amended or set aside. This the Jonadab company must recognize. They are bound by that law, and hence must not seek liberties outside of his organization, which is the city of refuge. Neither they nor human relatives or friends can buy their way out from under the blood-guilt upon the whole world. There is no way to buy the blessings of life with the right thereto. Only after Armageddon and after the blood of the antitypical "goat of the sin offering that is for the people" is applied to the great mercy seat in heaven will the way of justification to life on earth be opened. The city of refuge offers protection until the last member of God's royal priesthood dies and passes from earth, and then the Jonadab class will be in line to receive the gift of God through Jesus Christ.

W 8/15/34

**September 24**

(285)

*He commanded the most mighty men that were in his army to bind Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nege; and to cast them into the burning fiery furnace.—Dan. 3:20.*

In the final test the witness of God's remnant in giving notice and warning will be completed. Jehovah is directing his work and is maneuvering the enemy's forces and will cause them to take a position where they will have to fight. It is probable that the enemy then will forcibly stop the witness work and the witnesses from further activity for a time. All the forces then in line, the attack will begin. Such would be the crowning overt act by the enemy against Jehovah's witnesses. Satan's preparation having reached the completed stage, and knowing that he must now join battle, he makes his supreme challenge to Jehovah by committing the provocative act that causes Jehovah's Commanding Officer, Christ Jesus, to start the final battle. W 10/15/34

**September 25**

(148)

*God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to hell [Tartarus: margin], and committed them to pits of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment.*

—2 Pet. 2:4, A.R.V.

According to the Greek mind *Tartarus* pictures a deep abyss and signifies a great abasement or degradation, being reduced to a degraded state far deeper than to the dust from which man was made and from which he is raised out of death. It is the same abasement or degradation to which Lucifer was reduced. The "angels that sinned" committed that sin long before Noah's day, and were sentenced at the same time Satan was sentenced. They were once a part of God's organization under Lucifer, and when Lucifer became God's enemy they likewise became God's enemies, and He degraded them into darkness. Such seems to be the rule the Lord applies to all of those who are once enlightened and willfully become wicked. W 9/15/34

**September 26** (180)

*If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.—John 8:31, 32.*

Those in the royal house of God in the temple are wholly free from Satan's organization. One must know the truth and be in Christ Jesus and faithfully obey the Lord in order to be entirely free from Satan's organization. But that has no reference whatsoever to liberty to exercise one's own selfish desires or will and go contrary to God's organization instructions. Those who insist on following their selfish desires and ways and on ignoring instructions that proceed from the temple put themselves outside the pale of God's favor. Let no one think, because he is in the truth, he is at liberty to do as he pleases. He must do as it pleases the Lord, and the Lord's will is expressed in his Word. He is dealing through his organization, and has one way of doing his work, not many. W 5/15/34

**September 27** (321)

*Therefore on that day he called him Jerubbaal, saying, Let Baal plead against him, because he hath thrown down his altar.—Judg. 6:32.*

On the occasion that Gideon showed faith and confidence in God and when his father Joash took the position he did the name of Gideon was changed, to Jerubbaal, meaning "Let Baal plead for himself", hence showing that he was a witness against the Devil. The new name clearly implies a witness for Jehovah and against the Devil, and to such witness the Devil has no power to successfully plead. "Let the people be assembled: who among them can declare this, and shew us former things? let them bring forth their witnesses." "There was no counsellor, that, when I asked of them, could answer a word." (Isa. 43:9; 41:28) Joash's calling Gideon by a new name strongly suggests the giving of the new name by Jehovah to his faithful witnesses who by reason of being in Christ are part of the Greater Gideon. W 1/15/35

**September 28**

(185)

*The Lord stood with me, . . . and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.—2 Tim. 4:17.*

This gospel of the kingdom must be preached unto the nations as a witness before the final end. This the faithful will do, regardless of the enemy's vicious attacks. Daily they observe the enemy forming wicked devices and striving to bring forth some apparently lawful means of inflicting punishment upon God's anointed, and they know that at any time they are liable to be thrown to the "lions" of so-called "worldly justice"; but trusting in the Lord they go on in delivering the testimony. They will now stand steadfast in Christ, exercising full confidence that Jehovah in his own time and way will 'stop the mouths of lions' in behalf of those who continue to maintain integrity toward him. In all their trials, fights and tribulations they rejoice and sing, knowing the final result will be to their good and to His honor. W 12/15/34

**September 29**

(46)

*Be perfect with the Lord thy God.—Deut. 18:13.*

Those who will have part in vindicating Jehovah's name must maintain integrity toward him. He will not tolerate lawlessness, fault-finding, or complaining on the part of those in the kingdom covenant. In the song concerning the covenant in Moab the Lord said respecting the lawless: "I will hide my face from them, I will see what their end shall be: for they are a very froward generation, children in whom is no faith. They have moved me to jealousy with that which is not God; they have provoked me to anger with their vanities: and I will move them to jealousy with those which are not a people." (Deut. 32: 20, 21) Jehovah will not give victory to his chosen people because they deserve it, nor because of their inherent righteousness and self-development, but for the vindication of his expressed promise and his name.—Deut. 9:4-6. W 6/15/34

**September 30**

(217)

*And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.—Gen. 3: 15.*

The one paramount purpose of Jehovah is to vindicate his name, that all creation may see and know that he is God and that if creatures would live they must be in harmony with him. Therefore all the covenants of Jehovah bear a relationship to each other. When Lucifer rebelled and turned man into the way of sin Jehovah declared he would put enmity between the seed of the woman (picturing his organization) and the seed of Satan, and that the seed of God's woman should ultimately triumph to the vindication of God's great name. That declaration was in fact a covenant of Jehovah, because it was an expression of his purpose, which is unalterable and unchangeable. Christ Jesus, the seed, will completely triumph over Satan and his organization to the glory of Jehovah. W 7/1/34

**October 1**

(98)

*And they took ashes of the furnace, and stood before Pharaoh; and Moses sprinkled it up toward heaven; and it became a boil breaking forth with blains upon man, and upon beast.—Ex. 9: 10.*

Jehovah now causes his faithful remnant on earth, his witnesses, to proclaim before the Devil and all of his agents in the world, which constitutes modern Egypt, that the League of Nations, the World Court, the peace schemes, prosperity schemes, and all such like, are not of God, but of the Devil, and that the instigators and supporters thereof are unclean and an abomination in God's sight, just as King Uzziah was unclean and became leprous for his wrongful acts before Jehovah. Such declaration of truth throughout "Christendom" by means of radio, books, magazines, and word-of-mouth testimony has been and is a great plague to modern Egyptians. The ancient Egyptians blasphemed God's name because of their pains and sores. Likewise modern Egyptians curse. W 3/15/34

**October 2**

(26)

*If the dew be on the fleece only, and it be dry upon all the earth beside, then shall I know that thou wilt save Israel by mine hand.—Judg. 6:37.*

The fleece employed in Gideon's test pictured the Lord Jesus Christ, "a Lamb as it had been slain." Dew's descending upon the fleece would picture the Lord Jesus Christ at 1914 as receiving the joy accompanying his commission from Jehovah to proceed with the work of vindicating His name. The dry ground round about the fleece well pictures Jehovah's faithful servants, particularly from 1914 to 1918. During that short period those faithful ones alive on earth were trodden down and beaten like a threshing floor. The dew upon the fleece pictured Christ Jesus as receiving his joy, while at the same time the dry ground around the fleece pictured his faithful ones who had not yet entered into the joy of the Lord.. Christ Jesus was given joy in a copious quantity. W 1/15/35

**October 3**

(159)

*The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet . . . according to all that thou desiredst of the Lord thy God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, Let me not hear again the voice of the Lord my God, . . . that I die not.—Deut. 18:15, 16.*

Because of the fear of the Israelites they requested a mediator. "They said unto Moses, Speak thou with us, and we will hear." So likewise upon the coming of the Lord Jesus, the Greater Moses, to the temple and there gathering unto himself the faithful remnant, they must have a mediator, or else they would "fall into the hands of the living God", which they would not want to do, because of their imperfection. When the holy spirit ceased to perform the office of helper or comforter and advocate, the Lord Jesus at the temple stands between Jehovah and the remnant and performs the office of mediator and advocate as well as the inaugurator of the new covenant. W 5/1/34

**October 4**

(289)

*Transformed into the same image from glory to glory, even as from the Lord the Spirit.—2 Cor. 3:18, R.V.*

Those of the temple company are not changed from the glory of the law covenant to that of the new covenant, but they are changed into the likeness of Christ as faithful witnesses to Jehovah's name. During the Elijah period of the church the faithful ones in a measure reflected the Lord's glory, but, being transferred from the Elijah to the Elisha period of the Lord's work, they have greater honor and glory of service, because the Elisha work is an unselfish devotion to the honor of Jehovah's name. It is in this day that it becomes more apparent to the Jonadab class as to who are Jehovah's true witnesses giving honor to his name even as Jesus did when he was on earth. Jesus said: "The glory which thou gavest me I have given them." The faithful reflect the Lord's glory that even those outside may determine who are really unselfishly devoted to Jehovah. W 5/15/34

**October 5**

(201)

*Let me prove, I pray thee, but this once with the fleece; let it now be dry only upon the fleece, and upon all the ground let there be dew.—Judg. 6:39.*

In Gideon's first test the dew upon the fleece while the ground about it was dry symbolized Jesus himself entering into the joy of Jehovah. Now Jesus Christ would share his great joy with those faithful standing with him. In the second test the dew was upon the ground and the fleece was dry, picturing that the faithful ones gathered to the temple and anointed of the Lord had entered into the joy of the Lord. Divine approval of the 'faithful servant' class was then confirmed upon them by pouring out of God's spirit upon all such flesh entering into the joy of the Lord Jesus Christ. There the unifying process began in a special way. The dew of joy of dwelling together in unity began to distill upon Christ's true brethren on earth. —Ps. 133:1, 3. W 1/15/35

**October 6**

(198)

*None like unto the God of Jeshurun, who rideth upon the heaven in thy help, and in his excellency on the sky. The eternal God is thy refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms.—Deut. 33:26, 27.*

Those taken into the covenant for the kingdom have now begun to appreciate the truth that there is but one Jchovah God; many others claiming to be God's children are blind to this great truth. Jehovah's supremacy is affirmed in the covenant at Moab, and it is to those in the kingdom covenant that this great truth is magnified now. Those who desire to do so may choose another for their god and take the consequences, but the faithful will be wholly devoted to Jehovah God. Jehovah now calls to the would-be gods of the enemy for a final show-down. This truth he caused Moses to speak, and now the time has come to settle the great issue and God's chosen people must declare his purpose and his judgments. W 6/15/34

**October 7**

(200)

*There is no other god that can deliver after this sort.*

—Dan. 3:29.

Let the remnant now rejoice and confidently and patiently march on to Armageddon. Jehovah will gain for himself the victory by his strong right arm, Christ Jesus. Jehovah's unmatched power to deliver his people at Armageddon will prove his supremacy and that nothing can successfully resist his power. Now it is seen that the crucial test will come just before and at Armageddon. In that test the faithful have the assurance that almighty power will be used in their behalf. Jehovah makes it plain to his people now that the only place of safety is in his organization. Into this he has brought his anointed ones, and now their loyalty and fidelity to him is permitted to be tested, and in his loving-kindness he gives to them advance information concerning their protection and deliverance, that they may remain firm and steadfast on his side during the fiery test. W 10/15/34

**October 8**

(277)

*God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell [Tartarus, A.R.V., margin], and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment.—2 Pet. 2:4.*

Until the time of their execution they are confined in "chains of darkness", not literal chains such as we see with our eyes, but restraint in darkness similar to the state in which the "man of sin", "the son of perdition," is found, having lost the light concerning God's purpose. This means utter darkness as to their understanding of Jehovah's purpose. The holy angels have desired to look into these things, and now having come to the temple with Christ Jesus they are enlightened and permitted to look into them. Not so, however, with the wicked angels. There is no light of God's favor for them. In the light of God's face is life; hence "chains of thick darkness" (*Diaglott*) would clearly imply eventual destruction. W 9/15/34

**October 9**

(84)

*Seek ye the Lord, all ye meek of the earth, which have wrought his judgment.—Zeph. 2:3.*

The anointed temple class have wrought according to God's judgment or announced purpose. The Jonadab class, by taking their stand on Jehovah's side and connecting themselves with his organization, have also wrought his judgment or purpose. All these must be meek, that is, teachable, and hence must study God's Word, which is food convenient for them. All such must seek righteousness, that is, must be diligent to conform themselves to God's laws, which are righteous. All who pass through the great tribulation of Armageddon must be hid by Jehovah, otherwise they could not be shielded from that terrible trouble that will come upon the world. That means, then, that all in Jehovah's organization, including his anointed and all connected therewith, such as pictured by Jonadab, must now 'study to show themselves approved unto God, and be workers'. W 8/15/34

**October 10**

(326)

*Behold, how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity! As the dew of Hermon, and as the dew that descended upon the mountains of Zion.*

—Ps. 133: 1, 3.

This unity reached a climax with the cleansing of the temple, and those who entered into and have remained in the temple have continued in this state of unity in Christ. With this unity and harmonious action God has continued to send his refreshing truths to his people. When God fed his covenant people in the wilderness, first the dew fell upon the camp at night and then manna fell upon it. (Num. 11: 9) Even so with the coming of the unity of Christ's brethren, as pictured by the dew on the dry ground in Gideon's second test: there fell the heavenly bread of truth which the Lord has revealed and given to his people and which continues to give strength and hope to all who hold fast faith and confidence with Jesus. W 1/15/35

**October 11**

(177)

*Mine eyes shall be upon the faithful of the land, that they may dwell with me.—Ps. 101: 6.*

The relationship of the law covenant made in Egypt to the covenant of faithfulness made in Moab well foreshadowed the relationship of the new covenant to the covenant for the kingdom, which latter covenant requires absolute faithfulness on the part of those who will ultimately share in the kingdom of Christ Jesus. At the institution of the Memorial Jesus declared to his disciples that the new covenant had been made and he invited them to share in it. Then and thereafter he told them that Jehovah had covenanted with him for a kingdom, and his words to his disciples show that faithfulness is the chief thing required of those brought into the kingdom covenant. The covenant for the kingdom is his preparatory arrangement affording opportunity to those taken into the covenant and who are Jehovah's witnesses to prove their faithfulness even unto death. W 7/1/34

**October 12**

(162)

*This is the interpretation of the thing, . . . T'kel [= "Weighed"], thou art weighed in the balances and found wanting.—Dan. 5:26, 27, Roth.*

The uninterrupted reign of Great Babylon, Satan's organization, came to an end in A.D. 1914. It was then weighed in the balance and found wholly wanting. The weighing consumes time, which weighing began when the official Weighmaster, Christ Jesus, appeared at Jehovah's temple, and continues until the final end, which comes in the great tribulation. During the weighing of Babylon by Christ Jesus the ruling elements, pictured by Belshazzar and his feasters, put on vestments by which they identify themselves as anti-God, anti-Kingdom and Devil-worshipers, hence deserving to be slaughtered at Armageddon. While the weighing progresses Jehovah's witnesses, in obedience to commandment, go through "Christendom" and mark those God would save from slaughter. W 11/15/34

**October 13**

(80)

*Hear, O Israel: Jehovah our God is one Jehovah: and thou shalt love Jehovah thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.*

—Deut. 6: 4, 5, A.R.V.

There are not several Jehovahs, each having a different will and work. There is but one God. The remnant now see and appreciate their divinely given privilege of proclaiming the name of the one and only true Jehovah God. This they do with great gladness of heart. They worship the one and only true God, and this is the first commandment, first in time and in importance, as Jesus declared. (Mark 12: 29, 30) This first commandment is made a part of the covenant for the kingdom. Jehovah alone must be worshiped, above all else. The people taken out for his name must be 'holiness unto Jehovah', that is, be wholly devoted to him and not tempt him, nor shall they compromise with the enemy and his organization. W 6/15/34

**October 14**

(312)

*Thy people shall be willing in the day of thy power,  
in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning:  
thou hast the dew of thy youth.—Ps. 110:3.*

When the faithful are criticized by others of the company with which they are associated they are not to retaliate by indulging in controversies, but will busy themselves with the Lord's work. Their joy in the Lord must not be interrupted by indulging in personalities and unfruitful arguments with others. Their joy in having part in vindicating Jehovah's name has brought forth the faithful anointed, or "young men" or 'youths', on Christ's side, and they continue in his strength and might. They not only are willing, but delight to go forward in the war for the Lord and the honor of his name. These faithful ones are as fresh as morning dew. "Thy youth are to thee as the dew." (A.R.V., margin) They are as dew among many people who receive refreshing from their efforts to magnify Jehovah's name.—Mic. 5:7. W 1/15/35

**October 15**

(211)

*After those days, saith the Lord, I will put my law in  
their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and  
will be their God, and they shall be my people.*

—Jer. 31:33.

This definitely fixes the purpose of the new covenant, to wit, to prepare a people for Jehovah's name, who must be witnesses to his name to deliver their testimony before the destruction of Satan's organization. Jehovah visits Gentiles as well as Jews and takes out a people for his name, which people must bear testimony after they are taken into the new covenant and made qualified witnesses for Jehovah. He makes known how he will prepare this people; and this work is done after they are begotten of the spirit and come under the new covenant terms, to be prepared as his instruments to be used by Jehovah. When one is taken into God's organization he desires the truth in his mind and heart, in his inward parts. W 4/15/34

**October 16**

(138)

*The Lord said unto Gideon, The people that are with thee are too many for me to give the Midianites into their hands, lest Israel vaunt themselves against me, saying, Mine own hand hath saved me.—Judg. 7: 2.*

Had the original 32,000 of Gideon's army gone into action and won the battle they would have been little disposed to give credit therefor to Jehovah their Deliverer and Savior. This shows that anyone's having a part merely in the service is not the chief and important thing, but that vindication of Jehovah's name is of paramount importance. Jehovah will get the victory for himself, and that to his own honor and glory. His witnesses must do their work in the strength and to the glory of God. Jehovah does not need men to fight on his side, but he gives his faithful remnant an opportunity to be his witnesses and to maintain their integrity toward him and to have a part in the battle of the great day. W 2/15/35

**October 17**

(6)

*What saith the scripture? Cast out the bondwoman and her son: for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman.—Gal. 4: 30.*

The bondwoman's son was not the heir of promise. This demonstrates that the 'promised seed of Abraham' could be produced only by Jehovah's miraculous power. In due time the freewoman gave birth to the typical seed, Isaac. This was the result of the exercise of Jehovah's miraculous power. This birth was a confirmation of his covenant with Abraham. Isaac was a type of Christ Jesus, the Son of Jehovah. At the time of Jesus' baptism the voice from heaven was heard to say, "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased." There the real, true seed promised in the Abrahamic covenant was brought forth. Isaac alone was the type of Christ Jesus, who is the promised seed; as it is written: "In Isaac shall thy seed be called."—Gen. 21: 12. W 6/1/34

**October 18** (23)

*Then was the king exceeding glad for him, and commanded that they should take Daniel up out of the den. . . . And no manner of hurt was found upon him, because he believed in his God.—Dan. 6:23.*

Likewise Jehovah takes pleasure in the preservation of those who maintain integrity toward him. This could not foreshadow that before Armageddon God's remnant would be taken out of danger. Not until Satan and all his organization are destroyed will all danger be removed. Daniel was just as safe inside as outside of the lions' den, because he had the protection of Jehovah's angel. His being taken out seems to picture that there would be a series of acts of deliverance by Jehovah of members of his anointed remnant that they might continue to serve as his witnesses. Such acts would indicate his approval of his servant class and would serve as a comfort for them and be a vindication of his holy name. W 12/15/34

**October 19** (227)

*Saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord.—Matt. 4:10.*

In Moab Jehovah made a covenant with his chosen people who had been brought out of Egypt forty years previously. That covenant, recorded in Deuteronomy, foreshadowed the covenant for the kingdom. Jesus, made of a woman and under the law, was not a son of the law, but was and is the Son of God. He kept the terms of the covenant made at Moab, and Jehovah made him the great Prophet, whom Moses foreshadowed. Showing the relation between the covenant made in Moab and the kingdom covenant, when Jesus was put to the test by Satan he quoted from God's words recorded by Moses in Deuteronomy. On other occasions he quoted the words of the prophecy in Deuteronomy. When he spoke the words concerning the gathering of God's elect he clearly had in mind Moses' words recorded in Deuteronomy 30:4.—Matthew 24:31. W 7/1/34

**October 20**

(87)

*But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the spirit of the Lord.*

—*2 Cor. 3: 18.*

In the typical picture at the inauguration of the law covenant at Mount Sinai it was Moses' face that was veiled, and not the face of the Israelites. In the anti-type at the inauguration of the new covenant at Mount Zion it is the Greater Moses, Christ Jesus, whose face shines, and that shining is the reflecting of Jehovah's glory. Therefore when the face of the spiritual Israelite is turned to the Lord, and hence away from man, the veil is taken away and the vision of the unveiled face is had by those who are with Christ in full unity. This explains why those at the temple have a clear vision of the Lord's purpose and his glory at this time and others who think they are in Christ have no vision at all. W 5/15/34

**October 21**

(283)

*Bring them down unto the water, and I will try them for thee there: and it shall be, that of whom I say unto thee, This shall go with thee, the same shall go with thee.—*Judg. 7: 4.**

The stream of water from the well or spring of Harod pictured God's message of "present truth" which sets forth in unmistakable language the real issue between Satan and Jehovah and between the two great organizations. Jehovah puts the test upon his consecrated people in these last days and determines who shall go with the Greater Gideon, Christ Jesus. No man can claim the honor to himself, that he is chosen because of his inherent qualifications. The ones that stand today with the Greater Gideon are they that are "called and chosen"; it is the "remnant whom the Lord shall call". (Rev. 17: 14; Joel 2: 32) No individual holds another in or drives him out of the truth. God holds in whoever proves faithful. W 2/1/35

**October 22**

(301)

*For we have to struggle not with blood and flesh, but with the angelic rulers, the angelic authorities, the potentates of the dark present, the spirit-forces of evil in the heavenly sphere.—Eph. 6: 12, Moffatt.*

Why, then, should Jehovah's witnesses proceed with the work without fear of devils or other wicked agents on earth, as they are now doing? Because Jehovah of hosts is their fear and their sure protector. (Isa. 8: 12, 13) The holy angels under command of Christ Jesus as Jehovah's chief executive officer are sent before God's faithful witnesses. These are keeping under surveillance and holding back the wicked ones. Thus the protection of those remaining faithful to God as his witnesses is guaranteed. "The angel of Jehovah encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them." (Ps. 34: 7, A R.V.) Except for the protection afforded Jehovah's witnesses Satan and his wicked crowd would instantly destroy them. W 9/15/34

**October 23**

(322)

*And the king commanded, and they brought those men which had accused Daniel, and they cast them into the den of lions, them, their children, and their wives; and the lions had the mastery of them.—Dan. 6: 24.*

The conspirators reason that punishment of Jehovah's witnesses by the terms of their own laws (improperly called "rules of justice") would prove that Jehovah's witnesses are wrong, hence that their "lions" (earthly rules of justice) would tear these witnesses to pieces. They overlook the fact, however, that the lions in the prophetic picture belonged to the king and represented true justice that proceeds from God's throne and that real justice is meted out only by him. No one could ever have occasion to regret his faithful devotion to God. Men who today rule in "Christendom" and who have joined in conspiracy against Jehovah and his anointed and have attempted their destruction must be cast to the lions of divine justice, and this God will do in his due time. W 12/15/34

**October 24** (330)

*Lo, I see four men loose, walking in the midst of the fire, and they have no hurt; and the form of the fourth is like the Son of God.—Dan. 3:25.*

The fact that the three faithful Hebrews were not burned does not mean that Jehovah's witnesses may not suffer physical injury at the hands of Satan's minions, but that the Lord's work will not be injured by Satan nor will the integrity of the faithful witnesses be lessened by reason of Satan's assault. It will mean that Satan has failed in his design to destroy Jehovah's witnesses. The Lord Jesus was there in the furnace with those three faithful Hebrews and, by the grace of Jehovah, giving protection to them. This shows that Christ Jesus, Jehovah's Field Marshal, at Armageddon will lead the fight and overcome the enemy, and all who are with him and remain faithful to the end will also be overcomers: "they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful." W 10/15/34

**October 25** (175)

*And the Lord said unto Moses, Stretch out thine hand toward heaven, that there may be darkness over the land of Egypt.—Ex. 10:21.*

This seems to symbolically say that this message of notice and warning given by divine command pertains to heavenly things, which became totally dark to those making up the visible part of Satan's organization, and particularly those who form the religious or so-called "spiritual" elements of Satan's organization. In 1919 the League of Nations was set up as a substitute for God's kingdom, and which league the clergy hailed as 'the political expression of God's kingdom on earth'. In 1926 Jehovah's witnesses made public a declaration at the earthly seat of the beastly power of Satan. This set forth that the League of Nations is the child of the Devil and wholly in opposition to God's kingdom. The rulers of "Christendom" continued to scoff, and from that time thick darkness has settled down on "Christendom". W 3/15/34

**October 26**

(233)

*If any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father,  
Jesus Christ the righteous.—1 John 2: 1.*

There is nothing inconsistent in Jesus' being mediator for the church and also advocate for the church, both of which positions he does actually fill. Does not a mediator advocate for one who needs help? Moses was mediator of the law covenant, and he advocated for the Israelites who had sinned, when he prayed to God to forgive them. (Ex. 32: 29-32) Likewise Christ Jesus, the mediator of the new covenant is the advocate of those in God's organization who sin. Prior to the Lord's coming to the temple the holy spirit is designated in the Scriptures as a paraclete, comforter, or advocate or helper. Since the coming of the Lord to the temple the office of the holy spirit as advocate has ceased, but that does not affect the fact that Christ Jesus at Mount Zion both mediates and advocates.

W 4/1/34

**October 27**

(162)

*The Lord said unto Gideon, Every one that lappeth of the water with his tongue, as a dog lappeth, him shalt thou set by himself . . . And the number of them that lapped . . . were three hundred men.—Judg. 7: 5, 6.*

The three hundred lapped the water, "putting their hand to their mouth," and hence used their arms, illustrating the God-given power to convey to themselves refreshing waters of truth by those who 'with joy draw water out of the wells of salvation'. (Isa. 12: 3) The three hundred kept on the march as they scooped up the water in the hollow of the hand and transmitted it to the mouth. This foreshadowed alertness and watchfulness on the part of Jehovah's remnant, who clearly discern the enemy and are not at all in ignorance of his devices. (2 Cor. 2: 11) They receive the truth in the manner that calls for praise of Jehovah. The choice of them by the Lord shows that they drink water for the fight. W 2/1/35

**October 28**

(93)

*We are made a spectacle [a theatre, margin] unto the world, and to angels, and to men.—1 Cor. 4:9.*

Before the day of their execution Jehovah informs Satan and his wicked angels that they are to be executed. He uses his witnesses now on earth to give that testimony. This witness or testimony began particularly in 1928, when the Lord's angel began pouring out his "vial" upon the "air". From that time forward there went forth the declaration against Satan and his organization and in favor of Jehovah and his organization. This is a fitting time for Jehovah to make his faithful witnesses, the remnant, a "spectacle" or "theatre" both for men and for angels. Their testimony by word of mouth and by faithfulness to God and his organization under the most severe test is a true demonstration of Jehovah's purpose to preserve the faithful and to destroy the wicked. W 9/15/34

**October 29**

(63)

*But we all beholding the glory of the Lord in a face unveiled, are transformed into the same likeness, from glory to glory, as from the Lord, the Spirit.*

—2 Cor. 3:18, Diaglott.

The Lord Jesus does not veil his glory from us, because we have faith and have the spirit of the Lord. All such are spiritually minded and have a vision, while others are blinded. The faithful look into the unveiled face of the Lord Jesus as though looking into a mirror. They see there Jehovah's glory upon Jesus Christ, and such glory is caught up by those in the temple and reflected. That glory is not any part of us. Jehovah gives his glory to Christ Jesus, and to his temple company, and to none other. (Isa. 42:8) Christ Jesus reflects the glory of Jehovah, and those in the temple, beholding his glory, reflect the glory of the Lord Jesus to others, that they may see who are the true witnesses of Jehovah. W 5/15/34

**October 30**

(12)

*The Lord said unto Gideon, By the three hundred men that lapped will I save you, and deliver the Midianites into thine hand.—Judg. 7:7.*

Jehovah has gathered his people unto himself by the hand of his angels who are the reapers. Jehovah knoweth them that are his. It is these faithful ones that are with the Greater Gideon and that will be with him at the battle of Armageddon. It is therefore quite certain that the elect three hundred which formed Gideon's final and approved army pictured the earthly remnant who are made members of Jehovah's army under Christ, the assigned duty of which remnant is to sing the praises of Jchovah and his King, and to continually shout: "The sword of Jehovah and of his Vindicator," that is, "For Jehovah and for Gideon." Gideon and his little army assembled on the side of Mount Gilboa compares to Christ Jesus with his faithful ones now at Mount Zion. W 2/1/35

**October 31**

(271)

*He hath remembered his covenant . . . which covenant he made with Abraham, and his oath unto Isaac; and confirmed the same unto Jacob for a law, and to Israel for an everlasting covenant.—Ps. 105:8-10.*

In harmony with the type Jehovah confirmed the Abrahamic covenant with the true seed, Christ Jesus, by making with him the new covenant. Through him, the Mediator, Jehovah confirmed the Abrahamic covenant to the members of the body of Christ Jesus, that is, with spiritual Israel, in the same way, to wit, by a new covenant, which sets forth Jehovah's purpose concerning the seed of Abraham. The new covenant is therefore clasped to the Abrahamic covenant. It is a means employed by Jehovah to bring forth a people for his name, which people shall be associated with and by adoption become a part of the seed of Abraham and participate in the vindication of Jehovah's name. W 6/1/34

**November 1**

(78)

*Moreover, all these curses shall come . . . because thou servedst not the Lord thy God with joyfulness, and with gladness of heart.—Matt. 28: 45-47.*

Jehovah must be served with joy, and not with complaining, else a curse shall fall upon those failing to properly serve him. Sacrifices unto him must be unblemished; there must be no compromise with or mixing of the things and practices of Satan's organization with the work of Jehovah, such as man worship, this being the "sin of Samaria". God's people must knowingly, willingly and joyfully be entirely devoted to him. The service of Jehovah must be rendered at the place where he has chosen to put his name, in his organization, of which Christ Jesus is the head. (Deut. 16: 21, 22, 10-17) Anyone who thinks he is in line for the kingdom and insists on going his own way and not observing and walking with God's organization is violating this rule of the kingdom. W 6/15/34

**November 2**

(52)

*Be strong and of a good courage, fear not, nor be afraid of them: for the Lord thy God, he it is that doth go with thee; he will not fail thee.—Deut. 31: 6.*

When Gideon's little band of three hundred was about to begin the attack, the forward movement of this little army required great courage on the part of Gideon and his men. Courage does not mean foolhardiness. It means that a courageous man is one who unhesitatingly goes forward in the face of great danger and relies not upon his own strength but confidently relies upon the power that is backing him up in his forward movement. Gideon and his men were entirely unequal to the enemy in numbers and actual strength; hence they must and did rely upon the supreme strength of Jehovah God and showed complete faith in God when obeying his commandments. Jehovah supplies all the necessary encouragement and assurance and strength to his people now, through Christ Jesus. W 2/1/35

**November 3**

(181)

*I will preserve thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people, to establish the earth.—Isa. 49:8.*

Jehovah now gives his elect servant "for a covenant of the people". He does not make a covenant *with* the people. A covenant does not have to be made with creatures, but may be a one-sided or unilateral covenant. A covenant is a binding promise, agreement or expression of purpose to do or not to do a certain thing. God's word of promise to bring forth a seed in which all families of the earth should be blessed constitutes a covenant of Jehovah, a binding agreement or declaration to bless the human race. Then, when the seed is brought forth and the kingdom is set up and Jehovah's name is vindicated, Jehovah will give his elect servant, Christ, "for a covenant of the people." That means that Christ will stand as a guarantee to the people that God's purpose long ago announced will be faithfully carried out. W 7/15/34

**November 4**

(89)

*Then Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego came forth of the midst of the fire.—Dan. 3:26.*

The end of Armageddon will surely be a time of great rejoicing in heaven, when Christ's victory over Satan is complete and the name of the Most High is given its proper place in the mind of every creature that lives. All who survive Armageddon will look with awe and reverence and devotion upon God and his great King, even as those who stood with Nebuchadnezzar no doubt looked with astonishment upon the three Hebrews brought forth from the furnace. (Vs. 27) Jehovah's three faithful Hebrew witnesses, upon whose bodies the fire had no power, represented those who will be seen rejoicing. In the day of fiery trials Jehovah's witnesses faithfully perform their service and rejoice therein; and now, at the end of Armageddon, Christ Jesus calls them forth and acknowledges them before his Father even as he promised. W 10/15/34

**November 5**

(286)

*God did not spare the angels who sinned, but having confined them in Tartarus with chains of thick darkness, delivered them over into custody for judgment.*

—*2 Pet. 2:4, Diaglott.*

These wicked ones are constantly under surveillance of the holy angels acting under the Lord's direction, which surveillance, however, would not prevent the wicked ones from associating and operating with Satan in heaven, where they were when Satan was cast out of heaven by the Lord. At that same time these angels were cast down to the earth with Satan. They operate with Satan in his organization now to bring woe upon the world, and this they are doing. They are yet very much alive. Doubtless Jehovah has reserved them alive under restraint of darkness and under surveillance in order to show his power over them at Armageddon and thereby to convince all creation that Jehovah is God the Almighty One. W 9/15/34

**November 6**

(70)

*And thou shalt hear what they say; and afterward shall thine hands be strengthened to go down unto the host.—Judg. 7: 11.*

What our enemies have to say is not material to us, but what God says is of vital importance to us; and when he causes the enemy to utter a message as in Gideon's time that we might hear, it should be heeded because the message is from the Lord. Jehovah is not rushing his remnant to the battle before they are made strong and courageous in the Lord. For some time prior to the battle God causes his remnant to be instructed as to the meaning of his prophetic pictures long ago made and which he caused to be made for that very purpose. He has builded up his people in faith, love and unity, and they are "strengthened by his spirit in the inner man". The faithful, courageous ones rely not upon themselves or any other creature, but wholly upon the Lord.—Eph. 3:16. W 2/1/35

**November 7**

(9)

*The fear of a king is as the roaring of a lion: whoso provoketh him to anger sinneth against his own soul.*  
—Prov. 20: 2.

"Christendom's" rulers have already donned the vestments of satanic worship. Thus they have definitely identified themselves as against God and his kingdom, and they must be brought before and delivered to the "Lion of the tribe of Juda", to whom is committed all judgment and authority to execute judgment. It is the day of God's vengeance. Christ Jesus is the great Executioner and Vindicator. As the lions broke all the bones of those who conspired against Daniel, even so Christ will destroy completely Satan's wicked organization. The conspirators against Jehovah's witnesses have shown themselves to be like wild beasts seeking the unjust punishment and destruction of Jehovah's remnant, and God's rule of retributive justice must be applied to them. W 12/15/34

**November 8**

(68)

*And Moses stretched forth his rod toward heaven; and the Lord sent thunder and hail, and the fire ran along upon the ground.—Ex. 9: 23.*

Antitypically this plague began to come upon Satan's earthly organization in August 1928. It was then that Jehovah caused his people on earth to declare his message against Satan and his organization. The proclamation of a specific message was there begun and carried on through the earth, which message is designated "DECLARATION AGAINST SATAN AND FOR JEHOVAH". This was first publicly declared at an assembly of Jehovah's people in Detroit, Michigan. It was then that the lightnings flashed from the temple and the remnant had their first clear vision of the great issue joined between Satan and Jehovah. Satan's lies, which had found refuge in "Christendom", there began to be swept away, and are being swept away, by the flood of truth.—Isa. 28: 2-17. W 3/15/34

**November 9**

(53)

*Gather my saints together unto me; those that have made a covenant with me by sacrifice.—Ps. 50: 5.*

Three and one-half years after Jesus entered into the covenant by sacrifice God made the new covenant with him. No one can be taken into the new covenant until after having entered into a covenant with Jehovah by sacrifice. All begotten of God necessarily have made a covenant by sacrifice, and all such are appointed to die a sacrificial death and are exhorted to be faithful unto death. Not everyone who makes a covenant by sacrifice proves faithful; hence not everyone who makes a covenant by sacrifice is embraced within the class that is ‘the people taken out for his name’ Only the faithful ones are the saints of God. These have been taken into the new covenant with Christ Jesus, Jehovah’s high priest, and to such Jesus now says: “Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee the crown of life.” W 4/1/34

**November 10**

(34)

*I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.—Heb. 8: 10.*

The true follower of Christ Jesus, who is the Head of spiritual Israel, says as did the apostle: “I delight in the law of God after the inward man.” (Rom. 7: 22) Jehovah’s law is written in the heart of such as are his faithful sons, and it is to these he reveals the deep things of his Word. His law in the heart of his saints reveals to them the divine commission bestowed upon them to proclaim the message of his kingdom. It is to such that the testimony of Jesus Christ is committed, and it is these that faithfully keep God’s commandments and thereby prove their love for him. (Rev. 12: 17; 1 John 5: 3) Those taken into the covenant and who are entirely faithful must ‘preach this gospel of the kingdom’ in obedience to the commandment of the Lord.—Matt. 24: 14. W 4/15/34

## **November 11**

(171)

*Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.—Gal. 3: 16.*

Christ Jesus alone is the great Messenger of the new covenant. After the birth of the "man child", the kingdom, which birth took place in 1914, and later, to wit, in 1918, Christ Jesus, the Messenger of the new covenant, comes to the temple for judgment. (Mal. 3: 1) There Jehovah by Christ Jesus, the great Messenger of the covenant, builded up Zion, bringing forth first the faithful saints who had long ago died in faith; and then later the faithful remnant on earth are brought into Zion and become the children of God. This latter gathering is pictured by Abraham's concubine Keturah's giving birth to six sons who are the sons of Abraham, typifying the sons of God. Christ Jesus **ALONE** is the "seed of Abraham" according to the unconditional covenant which God made with Abraham. W 6/1/34

## **November 12**

(28)

*Whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.—Rom. 8: 29.*

The remnant brought into the temple at the inauguration of the new covenant are "caught up . . . in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air". (1 Thess. 4: 17) From out of the temple they discern the Lord's glory and receive instruction from him. This instruction changes their entire course of deportment and action. They are cleansed from things which are not of the Lord, such as the fear of man, the worship of man, the submission to worldly powers contrary to God's will, the conforming of themselves to man's teachings, and the following after man; and from anything else or all things else that mark one as conforming to the formalism of Babylon. The temple company must be conformed or transformed to the image of Christ Jesus. W 5/15/34

November 13

(184)

*This is nothing else save the sword of Gideon the son of Joash, a man of Israel: for into his hand hath God delivered Midian, and all the host.—Judg. 7: 14.*

Today the Greater Gideon does not begin the Armageddon battle until the message of truth from Jehovah God concerning the same is transmitted by his angels to the faithful remnant on earth. The fact that we are privileged to have this message and understanding at the present time would seem strongly to indicate that the day of battle is near at hand. God used a Midianite to say of the dream of his "fellow": "This is nothing else save the sword of Gideon." That information was doubtless transmitted by Gideon to the three hundred men in his camp. Now its meaning is understood by the remnant. They know the sword of battle is not their own, but that Jehovah's sword and his power given by him to the great Field Marshal will execute divine judgment against the enemy. W 2/15/35

November 14

(11)

*Joshua the son of Nun was full of the spirit of wisdom; for Moses had laid his hands upon him: . . . And there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the Lord knew face to face.—Deut. 34: 9, 10.*

The death of Moses did not take away leadership from Israel, because Joshua succeeded him and led the Israelites into Canaan. Concerning the kingdom covenant foreshadowed by the covenant made by Moses in Moab, the invincible leadership by Jehovah's great Prophet, Christ Jesus, is guaranteed to the remnant. These are entirely and fully assured that if they abide in the temple and faithfully and joyfully obey God's great Prophet, they shall be brought through with complete victory to the praise of Jehovah's name. This victory is not by what they do, but is Jehovah's victory accomplished for them by Christ Jesus his great instrument and for the honor and vindication of Jehovah's great name.—1 Cor. 15: 57. W 6/15/34

**November 15**

(325)

*The friendship of Jehovah is with them that fear him; and he will show them his covenant.—Ps. 25:14, A.R.V.*

The law covenant made in Egypt was added to the Abrahamic covenant but failed to produce a people for Jehovah's name that might have been made part of the promised seed of Abraham; hence it was abolished. The new covenant was made and was Jehovah's instrument added to the Abrahamic covenant, and by it a people for Jehovah's name are brought forth and made his witnesses to declare his name, and the faithful ones are the ones taken into the covenant for the kingdom. All the covenants are Jehovah's covenants and his instruments used to accomplish his will or purpose. The hidden or secret things concerning that purpose are made known to those who fear him and who faithfully and joyfully obey him. The greatest of all things thus revealed is concerning the name of the Most High, which he will now vindicate.

W 7/1/34

**November 16**

(238)

*Then Nebuchadnezzar spake, and said, Blessed be the God of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego, who hath sent his angel, and delivered his servants.—Dan. 3:28.*

Christ Jesus will bless and glorify Jehovah's name for his great act of deliverance of the earthly part of his organization, the remnant. These realize today more than at any time heretofore that they are not fighting against human creatures, but against the host of unseen wicked spirits under the chief command of Satan. Their deliverance will not come by reason of their own efforts, but by reason of God's loving-kindness for them: "The angel of the Lord encampeth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them." When Armageddon is done these faithful ones will appreciate Jehovah's provision for them more than they possibly can now, and they will acknowledge Jehovah's gracious provision for them and will continue to praise his name with songs of joy. W 10/15/34

**November 17**

(65)

*I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and give thee for a covenant of the people.—Isa. 42:6.*

Christ Jesus, the Redeemer and Vindicator of Jehovah's name, is the 'elect servant'. Those who are made members of Jehovah's royal house are counted in as a part of that organization, and hence form a part of that servant. Upon the servant company Jehovah has bestowed his name, and the like honor no other will ever receive. (Vs. 8) Jehovah now gives his elect servant "*for a covenant of the people*". The elect servant, Christ, stands as an absolute assurance to the peoples of the world that they shall receive the blessings of life as a free gift from God through Christ Jesus. In order to receive such a gift the people must receive knowledge, which is the first essential to faith, and must be willing to accept the free gift. W 7/15/34

**November 18**

(10)

*Gideon . . . worshipped, and returned into the host of Israel, and said, Arise; for the Lord hath delivered into your hand the host of Midian.—Judg. 7:15.*

Likewise God's people, as they learn the truth, now silently give thanks unto Jehovah for all his benefits unto them. Gideon gave thanks and worshiped Jehovah God, and not men. Likewise Christ's faithful followers today give thanks to and worship Jehovah and his King and have no desire to bestow honor and praise upon men. It required real courage for Gideon to begin the attack on an enemy at odds of four hundred to one; real courage is born of full faith and confidence in the power that backs up those moving forward. Gideon, hurrying back to his little army, gave the command, "Arise." That was a bold expression of faith in God. With stronger reasoning should the remnant today say to each other: "The Lord is my light and my salvation; whom shall I fear?" W 2/15/35

November 19

(256)

*Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.—Eph. 6: 11.*

The conflict or war in which Jehovah's witnesses engage is not with human creatures, that is, with flesh and blood. We were once led to believe that this was their fight, and that they must develop a perfect character to get to heaven. But that is not their real fight. It is with Satan and a host of wicked spirits operating with him since the time of the rebellion. These unseen wicked hosts use as their dupes or agents men, who are on earth and who willingly or unwillingly do the bidding of the unseen wicked powers. Why is that wicked crowd making war on Jehovah's witnesses? Because such are in God's organization and engage in delivering the message of truth Satan and his crowd do not want people to hear. Such truth pronounces the doom of Satan and his organization. W 9/15/34

November 20

(323)

*This is the interpretation of the thing, . . . P'res [= "Snatched-away"], snatched away is thy kingdom, and given to the Medes and Persians.—Dan. 5:26, 28, Roth.*

At Armageddon the world's rulership will be snatched away from Satan and taken over by Christ Jesus. In verse 25, "u-Pharsin" (the plural of "P'res") calls attention to two dividings, the dealing out of Babylon to Christ in 1914, when the Devil was cast out of heaven, and the second dealing out, which takes place at Armageddon, when Satan's organization is destroyed and ruling the world is taken over by Christ. The 'dividing of the kingdom' seems to support the conclusion that there are two divisions of the conquering forces, to wit, the unseen and the seen. The Medes symbolize the invisible organization of the Lord God, including cherubim, seraphim and angels. The Persians would picture Jehovah's anointed ones on earth, members of The Christ, to wit, the remnant. W 11/15/34

**November 21**

(19)

*For the priest's lips should keep knowledge, and they should seek the law at his mouth: for he is the messenger of the Lord of hosts.—Mal. 2:7.*

God's anointed remnant on earth are of the priestly order, and his law required that the priest must teach Jehovah's law to the people. Therefore there is an obligation laid upon the remnant, who are Jehovah's witnesses, to study and inform themselves and also to aid and teach those of the Jonadab class to understand the truth. An obligation is laid upon the Jonadab company to inform themselves by studying the Word of God, because they must continue to seek meekness, that is, to be teachable and be taught, and they must continue to seek righteousness, that is to say, to learn of and walk in the way God has appointed for them. Such are the conditions precedent to receiving his protection in the time of great tribulation. They must perform these conditions. W 8/15/34

**November 22**

(21)

*He divided the three hundred men into three companies, and he put a trumpet in every man's hand, with empty pitchers, and lamps within the pitchers.*

*—Judg. 7:16.*

God's anointed people are moving up to the greatest conflict of all time. It behooves them to be cautious and use sagacity and the wisdom that is given to them from on high. The three companies of Gideon's army did not picture three branches of God's service, because the three companies constituted one body; but there are three sections of Satan's visible organization to be attacked, to wit, religion, commerce, and politicians. God put it into the minds of his people to declare what constitutes Satan's organization and to serve notice upon each branch thereof and to make public declaration of the same, that the people of good will who desire to hear may hear and learn and then take an intelligent course. Jehovah directs his own work, though we hear no audible voices. W 2/15/35

November 23

(242)

*I make a decree, That in every dominion of my kingdom men tremble and fear before the God of Daniel; for he is the living God, and stedfast for ever, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.—Dan. 6: 26.*

That decree seems clearly to foreshadow the first decree of the new heaven following Armageddon. The remnant being still on earth at that time, the Lord's decree will necessarily bring them prominently before the people as the faithful servants of the Most High God and of Christ, who maintained integrity toward Jehovah under the most trying conditions. The battle of the great day will itself be a decree, because it will be a royal expression causing all creation of earth to tremble and fear before Jehovah. Then they shall know that Jehovah is God. The survivors will see that Jehovah has extended his favor to those faithful witnesses whom he has brought through the great tribulation, and will rejoice. W 12/15/34

November 24

(273)

*The Lord God said unto the serpent, . . . I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed.—Gen. 3: 14, 15.*

Now Satan knows that his time is very short until the great fight at Armageddon takes place, and he hastens to drive all men into spiritism or devilism and therefore against God; and for that reason there is at the present time a great turning to spiritism and spirit mediums throughout the land. All who follow the lead of Satan and his wicked allies will die at Armageddon. The present time, when the Lord Jesus at the temple is causing the proclamation of the truth to be made, and particularly the judgment of Jehovah concerning the destruction of these wicked ones, must be to them a time of real torment. No wonder they fight against Jehovah's witnesses; and thanks be unto God who provides all the needed protection for those who remain faithful! W 9/15/34

**November 25**

(98)

*He said unto them, Look on me, and do likewise: and, behold, when I come to the outside of the camp, it shall be that, as I do, so shall ye do.—Judg. 7: 17.*

Gideon did not say his men should look at one another and compare one with another to determine which among them was greater. Gideon directed the others to follow him. Today we are able to look on our invisible Leader, Christ Jesus, and do as he did, as described by the prophets in the Scriptures, and our work must be done as he directs. He instructs the remnant what they must do. Let each one look well to his own course and see that he is obeying instructions given to him by the Greater Gideon. If the other fellow fails to obey, that is his great misfortune. Render all the help possible, when help is desired, but do not try to keep someone else in line who does not wish to stay in line. Final preparation for the marching must now be quickly made. W 2/15/35

**November 26**

(302)

*Now when they saw the boldness of Peter and John, . . . they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.—Acts 4: 13.*

Those who are brought into the temple and toward whom the new covenant is inaugurated see and appreciate the truth that Christ Jesus is "the faithful and true witness" of Jehovah, full of integrity toward God, and wholly devoted to the vindication of his name; and they appreciate now that they must be like the Lord in this respect. Therefore they must be faithful witnesses of Jehovah, because they have been with Jesus and learned of him and must do as he does; they must be bold in bearing the testimony to the name of Jehovah. Thus their course of action is changed from what it was during the Elijah period, and they become like the Lord, as bold and fearless witnesses. This does not mean to be rude witnesses, but to calmly and fearlessly tell the truth. W 5/15/34

**November 27**

(217)

*Pharaoh called unto Moses, and said, Go ye, serve the Lord; only let your flocks and your herds be stayed: let your little ones also go with you.—Ex. 10: 24.*

Pharaoh expressed a willingness to let the Israelites go upon condition that they would leave behind them in Egypt all things of a commercial value. Likewise the world rulers now make some concessions to those who serve Jehovah God, but this upon conditions that would make Jehovah's witnesses go empty-handed before the Lord and be deprived of all means of offering the "continual sacrifice" of praise before Jehovah. God's faithful witnesses will not comply with any such condition, but they will obey Jehovah and not man or devil; and their attitude angers Satan's representatives and calls down upon the heads of Jehovah's witnesses the expression of wickedness and threats of destruction. This was foreshadowed by the anger expressed by Pharaoh.—*Ex. 10: 28, 29. W 3/15/34*

**November 28**

(60)

*When God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he sware by himself, saying, Surely blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee.—Heb. 6: 13, 14.*

In the Abrahamic covenant Abraham stood for Jehovah God himself; hence what is called the Abrahamic covenant is the expression of God's purpose, and that without conditions attached, to bring forth a seed through which all families of earth may be blessed. Jehovah bound that declaration by his oath, and, by reason of both his word and his oath this promise or covenant is immutable. (Heb. 6: 18) Abraham was the father, or life-giver, of Isaac, who typified the seed, God's Son. God's woman is not his covenant, but she stands for God's organization. Christ Jesus, the seed of promise, is the seed of God. The covenant does not produce a seed, but Jehovah by his woman (his organization) brings forth the seed. *W 7/1/34*

**November 29**

(37)

*He said, Come with me, and see my seal for the Lord.  
So they made him ride in his chariot.—2 Ki. 10: 16.*

The name "Jehovah's witnesses" applies to God's anointed ones who have been taken out of the world and made his witnesses. These alone bear the "new name". The Jonadab class are of those who 'hear' the message of truth and who must say to those in their hearing: "Come." Mark that Jehu invited Jonadab to "come with me, and see my zeal for the Lord". Jonadab was there as one to learn, and not one who was to teach. He saw that Jehu had and manifested a burning love and devotion or zeal for Jehovah's cause. From that he learned that he too must have a zeal for the Lord, that is, he must serve Jehovah because it is right to serve him, and not merely to selfishly receive blessings at Jehovah's hands. Jehovah's official organization on earth consists of his anointed remnant; and the Jonadabs who walk with the anointed are to be taught, but not be leaders. W 8/15/34

**November 30**

(283)

*When I blow the trumpet, I and all that are with me,  
then blow ye the trumpets also on every side of all the  
camp, and say, For Jehovah and for Gideon.*

—*Judg. 7:18, A.R.V.*

The battle-cry raised by Gideon's men was an open confession and declaration that the battle was God's fight and was for the exaltation and vindication of his name and to his honor and glory. It made the name of Almighty God the issue, and victory must result, otherwise Jehovah's name would suffer reproach. Today the name of Jehovah is a strong tower for his people. The time has come when that name must be proclaimed throughout earth, and that just before He exhibits his almighty power against the enemy organization. The faithful remnant must tell this message, because God has set this time for it to be done. Likewise the name of Christ Jesus must be made known; hence the battle-cry, "For Gideon." W 2/15/35

**December 1**

(71)

*Jehovah of hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our refuge.—Ps. 46: 11, A.R.V.*

Where is safety to be found? Who are they that find such place of certain safety? The destruction of the world in Noah's day by the flood foreshadowed the destruction of the present world at Armageddon. Because Noah devoted himself to Jehovah, maintained his integrity toward God and continued faithful, he was righteous in Jehovah's sight. At the direction of God Noah built the ark, which served as a place of safety and preservation of Noah and those associated with him. That foreshadowed that the only place of safety during the greatest tribulation of all time is to be found in Jehovah's organization. The ark which Noah built at the command of God is therefore a picture of Jehovah's organization, and symbolically says to all intelligent creatures: "Jehovah's organization is the only place of safety." W 9/15/34

**December 2**

(304)

*There was a thick darkness in all the land of Egypt three days: . . . but all the children of Israel had light in their dwellings.—Ex. 10:22, 23.*

Jehovah's faithful witnesses are now in the temple, the secret place of the Most High, where they enjoy everlasting light from the glory of the Lord and from his King. To the rulers and their supporters of this wicked world under Satan the temple of God is a place of darkness, because none of them can see therein. The rulers have been served with notice of warning, and now the remnant, the witnesses of Jehovah, will do what they can for the people of good will that they may hear the Lord's message and take their stand. While darkness covers the world, Jehovah continues to turn his light upon his faithful ones, giving them a more wonderful vision of his Word than they ever expected to have while on the earth. This suggests that the battle is near. W 3/15/34

**December 3**

(261)

*Tremble and fear before the God of Daniel; for he is the living God, and stedfast for ever, and his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed, and his dominion shall be even unto the end.—Dan. 6:26.*

To Israel Jehovah gave his law: "Thou shalt have no other gods before me." The battle of Armageddon will emphasize this great law to all living creation. Jehovah abides for ever before all other gods, and images are now done for and gone for ever. The great controversy, Who is God? will then have been settled for ever. Jehovah's kingdom and righteous rule under Christ shall endure, and "his dominion shall be even unto the end". That means that his supremacy and sovereign rule shall continue. Were all other things to end, Jehovah's supremacy and sovereign rule would continue for ever. "From everlasting to everlasting thou art God." The world's immediate rulership he confers upon his chief witness Christ. W 12/15/34

**December 4**

(285)

*The three companies blew the trumpets, and brake the pitchers, and held the torches . . . and they cried, The sword of Jehovah and of Gideon.—Judg. 7:20, A.R.V.*

Necessarily Gideon's name was shouted out that the enemy might know that the fight by him was carried on in Jehovah's name. That was not taking any of the glory away from Jehovah, but was merely showing by what authority Gideon was acting. Likewise today the name of Christ Jesus must be published as Jehovah's King. He is invisible to the enemy because he is a spirit. The shout must now be given that Christ Jesus is at one with the Most High and is Jehovah's executive officer, the One whose name hypocritical religious organizations have taken but whom at his coming they have rejected, and that thereafter he will bring about complete destruction of the enemy. He is Jehovah's chosen Warrior to bring victory in the name of Jehovah God, and to establish righteousness. W 2/15/35

**December 5**

(111)

*And I will give this people favour in the sight of the Egyptians: and it shall come to pass, that, when ye go, ye shall not go empty; . . . and ye shall spoil the Egyptians.—Ex. 3:21, 22.*

This means that Jehovah's witnesses are now to use the enemy's own means or instruments against them, such as radio stations, the facilities of the courts, the making of petitions and protests, the lawmaking bodies, which right is guaranteed by the fundamental law of their own land, and by the use of any and all other means to bring to the people's attention the message of Jehovah's kingdom. By thus doing they are not asking permission of Satan's organization to do something, but they are serving notice upon Satan's organization and demanding that this worldly organization shall cease interfering with the execution of God's purposes. Preparation is now being made for the final plague on Satan's organization. W 3/15/34

**December 6**

(12)

*Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts.—1 Cor. 4:5.*

The Lord, the great Judge, has come. It is therefore the time for judgment. The work of the remnant yet on earth in connection with the judgment is that of declaring Jehovah's judgments. Thus they have part in the judgment work. Jehovah's name must now be made known; his vengeance must be declared; but it is the faithful remnant, his witnesses, that are permitted to proclaim these truths. They are not to pass upon the guilt or innocence of any individual, but are to declare the law or rules of Jehovah's judgment, which apply to the obedient and the disobedient. His judgments are already written, and his saints gathered unto him are commissioned to declare, and must declare, his judgments. W 6/15/34

**December 7**

(18)

*Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God.*

—1 John 3:1.

The new covenant with spiritual Israel does not bring forth a seed, but it does bring forth a people for Jehovah's name whom he uses as his witnesses, and those who are in the new covenant and prove faithful he adopts into the royal house of God's sons and thereby they become by adoption part of the seed of Abraham. These are not the seed either of the Abrahamic covenant or of the new covenant. They are the seed or the sons of God. "Beloved, now are we the sons of God; and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is." (1 John 3:2) Not the covenant, but God's woman, his organization, gives birth to the seed; and the life proceeds from Jehovah himself. W 7/1/34

**December 8**

(323)

*And Gideon came to Jordan, and passed over, he, and the three hundred men that were with him, faint, yet pursuing them.—Judg. 8:4.*

This prophetic picture shows that the remnant are kept in some part of the Lord's service even during the battle of Armageddon. The faithful remnant "follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth" and until the last one of the enemy is dispatched. The Lord graciously counts his followers in as sharing with him in his exploits against Satan's hosts. Without doubt they will be singing the praises of Jehovah and of his Chief Officer while the fight goes on. They will not give in to weariness of the flesh, but will follow on even though bodily strength is greatly taxed. It may appear that the earthly company of the Lord is weary or in a bad way, but Christ Jesus is leading the fight and he does not know defeat. "A bruised reed [he may appear to be, yet] shall he not break."—Isa. 42:3. W 3/1/35

**December 9**

(142)

*Behold, I have given him for a witness to the people,  
a leader and commander to the people.—Isa. 55:4.*

God's unconditional promise to bless all nations is a covenant, because it is the manifestation of his will or purpose and must be carried out. He accomplishes this purpose through his 'seed of promise', his elect servant, Christ Jesus. Being made leader, instructor, and commander of the people, Christ Jesus gives to them knowledge, leads them in the right way, and commands what they shall do. They must obey him before they would receive the gift of life. Upon the shoulder of Christ, the great Prince of Peace, the righteous government or kingdom rests. He is the Wonderful Counselor or adviser of the people; he is the Everlasting Father, because he gives life to all who obey him. (Isa. 9:6, 7) Therefore it is written concerning him and for the benefit of the people: "In his name shall the Gentiles hope."—Matt. 12:21, R.V.

W 7/15/34

**December 10**

(295)

*Fervent in spirit; serving the Lord. Be of the same  
mind one toward another.—Rom. 12:11, 16.*

Let everyone who loves the Lord God and Christ Jesus busy himself in serving the Lord and in making known his kingdom. This is the time the witness work must be done. Bear in mind that the enemy is fatally bent on destroying God's organization on earth, and divine protection will be given only to the faithful. Therefore let all of God's organization dwell together and walk together in peace and harmony. Let all strife and fault-finding be put aside. Those who indulge in fault-finding and murmuring and strife will be adversely judged by the Lord. (Jude 15-21) All of the temple class must be at harmony and in unity in Christ and with each other, and therefore must dwell in peace. Anyone who claims to be of the temple company and who causes disturbances or strife gives evidence that he is not of the temple. W 8/15/34

**December 11**

(52)

*The three companies blew the trumpets, and brake the pitchers, and held the lamps in their left hands, and . . . cried, The sword of the Lord, and of Gideon.*

—*Judg. 7: 20.*

Jehovah, by his invisible army, did what Gideon and his men could not have done. Blowing the trumpets was a signal for united action, showing that God's invisible host would go into action immediately for the protection of the visible part of his army. (Num. 10: 9) The time is now here to brandish the light of Jehovah's Word announcing his purpose. This Jehovah's witnesses must do when brought before the enemy organization, into courts, before commissions, and law-making bodies of the land: ever let the light of truth shine forth. Jehovah's witnesses could not now be quiet and at the same time be faithful to the Lord God. They must continue to vigorously sound the trumpet and wave their torchlights. W 2/15/35

**December 12**

(155)

*Let none of you suffer . . . as an evil doer, or as a busybody in other men's matters.—1 Pet. 4: 15.*

Those who act as spiritual policemen for their brethren often find themselves in great distress and trouble, due to the fact that they neglect to abide by the Lord's Word. Jehovah's unalterable rule now applying specifically to the temple company is that they must "do justly"; which means that every one of the temple must do what is right and fair, towards his brethren especially; "love mercy," the very opposite of a desire to injure another or to inflict punishment upon another, but having a desire to help one in trouble who really seeks or desires help; "walk humbly with thy God," which means to be fully obedient to Jehovah, pursuing at all times a course wholly devoted to righteousness. These rules require one to be guided strictly by what is laid down in the Scriptures; hence all must inform themselves. W 9/15/34

**December 13**

(217)

*He . . . smote all the firstborn in Egypt; the chief of their strength in the tabernacles of Ham: but made his own people to go forth like sheep.—Ps. 78: 50-52.*

Egypt's firstborn would picture all of Satan's children, that is, those of his earthly organization who are the chief of their strength, to wit, leaders and chief ones in the religious, commercial and political branches of his visible organization. The firstborn of every portion of Satan's organization were destroyed, which antitypically includes the "man of sin", the "strong-arm squad" and those who put forth their strength to carry forward Satan's schemes. In this day Satan makes war upon the remnant of Jehovah and would destroy them. The only protection these faithful witnesses have is from the Lord, and this comes by reason of their obedience to Jehovah's commandment given to them by the Greater Moses, Christ Jesus.—Acts 3:23. W 3/15/34

**December 14**

(148)

*Then Zebah and Zalmunna said, Rise thou, and fall upon us; for as the man is, so is his strength. And Gideon arose, and slew Zebah and Zalmunna.—Judg. 8:21.*

Gideon was nearest of kin to his slain brothers, and hence the duty devolved upon him to slay these murderers. In this he pictures Christ Jesus as the avenger of blood fulfilling the obligation laid upon him by Jehovah, and this in answer to the cry of those who have been slain as a testimony to God's Word. (Rev. 6: 10) "And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily." (Luke 18: 7, 8) This is in exact harmony with the prayer the remnant by divine command now pray concerning the enemy: "Do unto them as unto the Midianites; . . . Make their nobles like Oreb and like Zeeb; yea, all their princes as Zebah and as Zalmunna."—Ps. 83: 9, 11, 12. W 3/1/35

**December 15**

(114)

*He delivereth and rescueth, and he worketh signs and wonders in heaven and in earth, who hath delivered Daniel from the power of the lions.—Dan. 6: 27.*

To his faithful witnesses Jehovah has revealed the two great signs, the organization of Satan and the organization of Jehovah, and at Armageddon God will prove to all that these "signs" are true. He has worked "signs and wonders" in earth by using his faithful remnant, and in due time also these will be confirmed as true. Daniel's rescue from the lions' den foretold the rescue and delivery of the remnant from the cruel and unrighteous law, and from the ravages that will come upon the earth during Armageddon. Their being on earth after destruction of the wicked at Armageddon will prove they are on earth only by the power and grace of Almighty God, and this will be a vindication of his name and power. All creation then must acknowledge that Jehovah is God. W 12/15/34

**December 16**

(198)

*But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the Lord, I . . . will be their God, and they shall be my people.*

—*Jer. 31: 33.*

When Jehovah says to those in the covenant, "I . . . will be their God," he must mean that no false rulers will be tolerated; therefore there must not be practiced the ceremony of giving honor and glory and worship to creatures, because such is as the "sin of Samaria". All formalities performed for show must be put away. Honor and glory must be given to Jehovah, to whom honor and glory is due. (Ps. 96: 8) It is now easy to be seen by those in the temple that the work of writing God's law in the hearts of his people and in their inward parts has been the very work he has been doing in them in preparing them to be his witnesses; and this is proof that the new covenant applies exclusively to spiritual Israel. W 4/15/34

**December 17**

(199)

*Our sufficiency is of God: who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament.—2 Cor. 3:5, 6.*

For what purpose are these made "able ministers of the new [covenant]"? Manifestly for the purpose, as stated by the same apostle in another place, to wit, "for the perfecting of the saints, . . . till we all come in the unity of the faith." (Eph. 4:11-13) Such is the work of 'taking out a people for his name', which work the new covenant accomplishes. The ministry of Paul to the church proved him to be such an able minister to the new covenant. No consecrated and spirit-begotten child of God could be counted an able minister of the new covenant, however, until he has attained maturity in Christ, that is to say, has become an elder in fact, and not by mere election of fellow creatures. When all are brought to unity in Christ all such are elders in fact. W 5/1/34

**December 18**

(220)

*God . . . spared not the old world, but saved Noah, the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world.—2 Pet. 2:4, 5.*

God's witness Noah, the "preacher of righteousness", foreshadowed God's faithful remnant now on the earth. Those persons with Noah in the ark foreshadowed the Jonadab company now on the earth who associate themselves with God's organization. These have the promise that, performing the conditions named, they may be hid in the day of Jehovah's anger. The conditions are that they attach themselves to the Lord's organization, and they must remain there steadfastly serving God, working in harmony with Jehovah's witnesses, and refusing to compromise with the world. Any attempt to remain in the organization or "chariot" of the Lord and at the same time to support the wicked world, even with the unwise desire of lifting up the world, will meet with disaster. W 9/15/34

**December 19**

(236)

*When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.—Col. 3:4.*

Christ Jesus has appeared at the temple and gathered Jehovah's saints unto himself. Here Christ Jesus instructs the temple company, and sends them forth to reflect his glory. The angels of the Lord have gathered out the lawless ones, and the Lord has clothed the faithful ones with the robe of righteousness, and sends them forth as his witnesses to shine by reflecting his glory; and now are fulfilled his words: "Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father." (Matt. 13:43) Only Jehovah's witnesses, made part of the 'elect servant' class, are given such glory. As the faithful witnesses of Jehovah these maintain their integrity toward him, and because they do so the reproaches which fell upon Christ Jesus fall upon them and they are opposed and persecuted.—Rom. 15:3. W 5/15/34

**December 20**

(273)

*The men of Israel said unto Gideon, Rule thou over us . . . Gideon said unto them, I will not rule over you, . . . the Lord shall rule over you.—Judg. 8:22, 23.*

Gideon could not accept the office of ruler at the hand of the people. Nor is Christ Jesus an opportunist who will take advantage of the Armageddon victory and the praise that will follow to accept honor and office from the people. Jehovah God is the King of eternity, and hence the Great Ruler. It was in 1914 that he placed his anointed King upon his throne and sent him forth to rule, his first work being the ousting of the enemy. Vindication must take place before the thousand-year reign of Christ with his saints begins. The all-important thing of the Gideon picture was the driving out of the Midianites, foreshadowing Satan's organization and its destruction; which was a vindication of Jehovah's name. Gideon's refusal foreshadowed Jesus' faithfulness. W 3/1/35

**December 21**

(323)

*Then commanded Belshazzar and they clothed Daniel with scarlet, . . . that he should be the third ruler in the kingdom. In that night was Belshazzar the king of the Chaldeans slain.—Dan. 5:29, 30.*

At the complete fall of Babylon, Satan's organization, including "Christendom", the order of the rulers of the world will be, to wit, first, or supreme Ruler, Jehovah; second, Jesus Christ; third, the members of the body of Christ, and hence the "faithful and wise servant" class, whom Daniel foreshadowed. The "handwriting" has now appeared on the wall of "Christendom"; her doom is sealed. It is certain that Satan's seed, those who now rule the earth, will be destroyed. The Bible does not disclose who slew Belshazzar. It was the agency of Jehovah that did it; hence here is pictured the work of Jehovah's Executioner, Christ Jesus, enforcing the divine judgment, which is already written against Satan's organization.

W 11/15/34

**December 22**

(331)

*Unto the place which the Lord your God shall choose out of all your tribes to put his name there, even unto his habitation shall ye seek.—Deut. 12:5.*

In making the covenant in Moab before the crossing of Israel into Canaan Jehovah states his purpose to choose one place for his house or temple and to put his name there. In this Jehovah foretold that, when Zion is builded up and the remnant gathered to the temple under Christ Jesus and Jehovah puts his name there, all sacrifice of praise and service must be done according to the rules of that organization and through his organization, and not according to every man's own whim or desire. "Ye shall not do after all the things that we do here this day, every man whatsoever is right in his own eyes." (Deut. 12:8) Jehovah's work must be done according to the rules of his organization.

W 6/15/34

**December 23**

(217)

*Go through, go through the gates; prepare ye the way of the people; cast up, cast up the highway; gather out the stones; lift up a standard for the people.*

—Isa. 62:10.

By his covenant Jehovah God is majestically carrying forward his announced purposes. He has taken out a people for his name, who must now be his witnesses; and, continuing faithful, they soon shall participate in the vindication of his name. But before the battle of the great day of God Almighty it is his expressed will concerning them that they must, under the leadership of Christ Jesus, bring knowledge home to the people of good will, that they may have opportunity to turn their hearts and their devotion to God and his kingdom. The present duty of Jehovah's anointed witnesses is plain and clear. Performance is not discretionary, but mandatory. It is their privilege to invite people of good will to join in proclaiming God's name and kingdom.—Rev. 22:17. W 7/15/34

**December 24**

(306)

*The time will fail me if I tell of Gideon . . . and the prophets: who through faith . . . turned to flight armies of aliens.—Heb. 11:32-34, A.R.V.*

That Gideon was faithful and true to the end is attested by the Scripture record. Now gross darkness is upon most of the inhabitants of earth, but Jehovah has placed in the hands of his witnesses an abundance of light which is being used by the grace and direction of Christ Jesus, the Greater Gideon. The faithful have been brought to the very outposts of the enemy's camp. They observe the enemy, and what they see assures them that victory will be soon and is certain to crown the Lord's efforts. They are now ever on the alert, and not only willing, but eager, to obey every commandment of the Lord. Waving torchlights of truth and proclaiming the message of God's Word they continue with courage to shout their battle-cry: "For Jehovah and His Vindicator." W 3/1/35

**December 25**

(149)

*Therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, Jonadab the son of Rechab shall not want a man to stand before me for ever.—Jer. 35:19.*

Jehovah's organization is the only place of safety. One who once avails himself of that safety and then voluntarily leaves the same, is certain of destruction. Those who are of the Jonadab company must continue to faithfully study God's purposes as embraced in his Word; hence the publication of the Lord's Word is for their benefit. They must show their love for God by being diligent in keeping his commandments. Jehovah, the Almighty God, is the Giver of life; he will preserve those who love and obey him and who remain steadfastly faithful to his organization, at all times manifesting unfaltering, unbreakable love for Jehovah. The crucial test upon all intelligent creation is here. Let all such take warning and beware. "Jehovah is in his holy temple: let all the earth keep silence before him."—Hab. 2:20, A.R.V. W 9/15/34

**December 26**

(253)

*Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.—Heb. 12:14.*

God's anointed organization is represented by "Zion". The term "Jerusalem" applies generally to Jehovah's organization, to which organization the Jonadab class have attached themselves. The great Judge, Christ Jesus, is now carrying on his judgment in dividing the people and bringing on his side those who love God and righteousness. God's remnant or priestly class, in particular, must take the lead in peace, unity and harmonious action. All who accompany them must be at peace one with another and serve the Lord faithfully. "For there are set thrones of judgment, the thrones of the house of David. Pray for the peace of Jerusalem, they shall prosper that love thee. Peace be within thy walls, and prosperity within thy palaces. For my brethren and companions' sakes, I will now say, Peace be within thee." W 8/15/34

**December 27**

(278)

*Then the king promoted Shadrach, Meshach, and Abed-nego, in the province of Babylon.—Dan. 3:30.*

That promotion of the three Hebrews suggests further privileges of service that God will give to his faithful remnant on the earth immediately following Armageddon. That service will, to be sure, be temporary, but it seems reasonable that God would have some service performed on earth by his faithful remnant at the beginning of the reconstruction work in connection with those faithful men of old who shall become the visible governors on earth. It will be a great privilege to personally meet these new governors at that time and have some communion, fellowship and service with them. That will be a happy time. The temple work on earth after Armageddon will be followed by a change of the remnant from human to spirit organism and to the realm of far greater opportunities of service to the Most High. W 10/15/34

**December 28**

(23)

*I the Lord will be their God, and my servant David a prince among them; I the Lord have spoken it. And I will make with them a covenant of peace.*

—Ezek. 34:24, 25.

Those toward whom the new covenant has been inaugurated, and who are therefore in the temple, are the people of God, and the great antitypical David is their Head, King or Ruler. While the "covenant of peace" here is not the new covenant, it is a covenant of peace which Jehovah gives to those toward whom the new covenant has been inaugurated. The enemy will continue to assault them, but such assaults will not cause the faithful to fear either man or devil, nor will the faithful fail to boldly declare God's message of truth. They will obey God and not man. Their faith and confidence is in Jehovah. They know their strength comes from him; hence they are at great peace, because they know God's promises are sure, and the enemy shall not prevail against them. W 6/1/34

**December 29**

(225)

*By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually.—Heb. 13:15.*

The course of God's anointed is clearly pointed out. Their service unto Jehovah must be continuous praise giving glory to his name while pointing people of good will to the kingdom as their sole hope. All the temple class will now continue to give testimony of praise to Jehovah's name, that all willing ones may know that Jehovah is God. His covenant announcing his expressed purpose to bless all the nations through Christ Jesus his seed is an everlasting covenant. All of its purposes will be completely performed. He gives his chosen one, the Christ, for a covenant of the people, fully assuring them that if they would receive the blessing of life everlasting in happiness they must know that Jehovah is God and Christ is his High Priest, and they must render complete obedience to Christ to God's glory. W 7/15/34

**December 30**

(48)

*The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations.—2 Pet. 2:9.*

Jehovah will not permit Satan to destroy the right to life of any of his anointed ones who remain faithful to him. They must die, of course; but, being faithful unto death, they shall receive the crown of life. The Devil and the wicked angels likewise assaulted Jesus and continued to do so for three and one-half years. They succeeded in causing his death, but God raised him out of death and thus demonstrated his supreme power and made manifest his reward to those who are faithful. The Jonadab company will be assaulted by Satan and his wicked agents and allies. If they stand firm and remain faithful and true to God and his organization, they will be preserved. These truths are now of greatest importance. It behooves each one of Jehovah's witnesses to aid others to understand these truths who have a desire to know and to serve Jehovah God. W 9/15/34

December 31

(89)

*Say, For Jehovah and for Gideon!—Judg. 7: 18, Roth.*

Henceforth this is the battle-cry of God's anointed people, until the battle of Armageddon is fought and until the victory is completely won. It will be shouted by God's people, and his praises will continue to be sounded by the mouth of everyone that survives. Not only should the faithful remnant, pictured by Gideon's three hundred, continue this battle-cry as they move forward, but everyone who takes his stand firmly on the side of Jehovah God and his King should properly take up that battle-cry. In harmony with the words of Jesus, let all who hear likewise say, "Come." (Rev. 22: 17) The day of battle is at hand. Soon the forces of wickedness shall fall and perish and only the righteous shall triumph, and then prosperity shall come to earth to stay. The shout of victory has begun, because the battle is Jehovah's, and Jehovah always wins.

W 2/15/35

The Headquarters of the  
**WATCH TOWER BIBLE & TRACT SOCIETY**  
and the International Bible Students Association  
are located at  
117 Adams Street, Brooklyn, N. Y.

Address of the Society's branches  
in other countries:

Argentina,	Calle Cramer 4555,	Buenos Aires
Australia,	7 Beresford Rd	Strathfield, N S W.
Austria,	Halbgasse 26,	Vienna VII
Belgium,	66 Rue de l'Intendant,	Brussels
Brazil,	Av. Celso Garcia 951,	Sao Paulo
British Guiana,	Box 107,	Georgetown, Demerara
Canada,	40 Irwin Ave,	Toronto 5, Ont.
Chile,	Avda Buenos Aires 80, (Blanqueado)	Santiago
China,	Box 1903,	Shanghai
Czechoslovakia,	Tylova ul. 16,	Praha-Smichov
Denmark,	Sondre Fasanvej 56,	Copenhagen
England,	34 Craven Terrace,	London, W. 2
Estonia,	Suur Tartu - Maantee 72-3,	Tallinn
Finland,	Valnamolsenkatu 27,	Helsinki
France,	129 Faubourg Poissonniere,	Paris IX
Germany,	Fuchsberg 4/5,	Magdeburg
Greece,	Lombardou 44.	Athens
Hawaii,	Box 681,	Honolulu
Holland,	Camplaan 28,	Heemstede
India,	40 Colaba Rd,	Bombay 5
Jamaica, B.W.I.,	151 King St.,	Kingston
Japan,	58 Ogikubo, 4-Chome.	Suginamiku, Tokyo
Java,	Post Box 59,	Batavia Centrum
Korea,	1-129 Sedaimon-Cho,	Seoul
Latvia,	Cesu Iela 11 Dz 25,	Riga
Lithuania,	Aukštaičių g-ve 8, b 1,	Kaunas
Mexico,	Calzada de Melchor Ocampo 71,	Mexico, D.F.
New Zealand,	Box 252,	Wellington
Norway,	Inkognitogaten 28, b.	Oslo
Philippine Islands,	1132 Rizal Ave,	Santa Cruz, Manila
Poland,	Rzgowska ul 24,	Lodz
Rumania,	Str. Crisana No 33,	Bucuresti 2
South Africa,	Boston House,	Cape Town
Spain,	Calle de Cadalso 11,	Madrid
Straits Settlements,	Post Box 566,	Singapore
Sweden,	Luntmakaregatan 94,	Stockholm
Switzerland,	Allmendstrasse 39,	Berne
Trinidad, B.W.I.,	Box 194.	Port of Spain
West Africa,	71 Broad St,	Lagos, Nigeria
Yugoslavia,	Visegradska ul. 15.	Beograd

Please write direct to the Watch Tower Bible & Tract Society at the above addresses for terms on our literature in those countries. Some of our publications are printed in 60 languages.